This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

This is an authorized facsimile of the original book, and was produced in 1972 by microfilm-xerography by University Microfilms, A Xerox Company, Ann Arbor, Michigan, U.S.A.

THE

WORKS

OF

DON FRANCISCO DE QUEVEDO.

TRANSLATED FROM THE SPANISH.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

CONTAINING

CURIOUS HISTORY OF THE NIGHT ADVENTURER. || THE LIFE OF PAUL THE SPANISH SHARPER—BOOK I.

Illustrated with Beautiful Engravings.

EDINBURGH:

PRINTED FOR MUNDELL & SON; J. MUNDELL, COLLEGE, GLASGOW; AND J. WRIGHT, LONDON.

1798.

868
Q3
tL693
1798a
v.2

0913310-018

And they falling together by the ears tore
stripped one another's hose.

Our hero was the youngeſt of three brothers; the eldeſt ſo wholly addicted to fencing, that, by his continual handling of cold iron, he loſt an eye; which might have been no ſmall advantage towards making him a good markſman. The ſecond brother placed all his hopes on the air, for, being an excellent tennis player, he reckoned to make his fortune that way; but, among all the other faults in that game, he committed one never to be retrieved; for having overheated himſelf, he fell into a pleuriſy, of which he died, leaving the poor balls and rackets deſtitute of a real friend, who loved them above his life. This youngeſt brother we are to treat of, in his tender years, was called plain Don Diego; but, when grown up, ſome added the ſurname of Fly-Light, and others called him Don Diego Love-Night; becauſe he fled from light and only delighted in darkneſs. At ten years of age he was put to the Latin ſchool, where, though he advanced but little, yet he had the good luck not to grow pedantic. This ſmall capacity was highly favoured by Fortune, who took care of him from his cradle. Scarce was he ſixteen years of age before he was preferred to ſome church-livings, which obliged him to reſide at Toledo; a pleaſing duty that compelled him to live in ſo delightful

a place. Four years he continued under this reſtraint; but as ſoon as he could reckon twenty years of age, neither his duty, nor the many charms of that beautiful city, which are ſuch as would engage the moſt airy diſpoſitions, could in the leaſt prevail upon his. He ſo delighted in rambling, that, to comply with his wandering inclination, he parted with his benefices, reſerving to himſelf ſome penſions out of them, which, together with his own eſtate, made up about five or ſix hundred pounds a-year.

He left Toledo to ſettle at Madrid, the uſual reſidence of the Court of Spain; and made choice of that quarter of the town which beſt ſuited with his humour, being a blind corner, remote from the concourſe of the people, where he bought a houſe that had two ſeparate apartments. The one of them he made choice of for himſelf, fitting it up to his own extravagant fancy; without altering the other, which however he furniſhed very handſomely, to entertain his friends upon occaſion. The apartment he reſerved for himſelf was contrived after a very odd manner. He pulled down the upper ſtories, and made it much lower than all the houſes about it, that they might ſhelter it from the ſun, which he mortally hated; he alſo ſtopped up all the windows that could admit the leaſt

glimpſe of day-light: The walls were hung with black baize, as condemned by him to perpetual mourning. In ſhort, it was more like a tomb for the dead than a manſion for the living. He was a paſſionate lover of muſic, and delighted in nothing more than in ſinging to his guittar; ſo that, by continual practice, he was become a match for the beſt in that profeſſion. He was ſatisfied with what he had, diſdaining any means of increaſing it. His courſe of life was different from all the reſt of mankind, turning day into night and night into day. He never went abroad till it was quite dark, and as ſoon as ever he diſcovered the firſt dawning of the day he haſted home.

When he went to ramble about the ſtreets, though, in the darkeſt nights, he took nothing with him but his ſword, a target hanging to his girdle, and ſometimes a guittar in his hand. In theſe his midnight travels, Fortune threw in his way ſeveral adventures, which always proved lucky enough to him; at leaſt he never came off with diſhonour.

ADVENTURE I.

About the middle of January, Don Diego Love-Night took a fancy, near eleven at night, to ramble the ſtreets of Madrid, playing on his guittar, and at times ſinging ſome diverting airs to his inſtrument. He had not gone far from his houſe before he put himſelf into a poſture to ſerenade a certain lady of his acquaintance; but calling to mind that he had given her that diverſion ſeveral times before, and conſidering that malicious perſons might perhaps miſinterpret his innocent intentions, and lay ſome blemiſh on the reputation of the perſon he deſigned to honour; he went on, moving as ſlowly as generally a man does who is going againſt his will. He paſſed on from one ſtreet to another, without any deſign but to uſe exerciſe for his health, and to divert himſelf with ſinging and playing on his guittar when the fancy took him. Having traverſed a conſiderable part of Madrid, when the clocks of the monaſteries had juſt done ringing the religious to matins, which is always at twelve, he found himſelf in a part of the town he was yet a ſtranger to, and ſhould have taken it for the real manſion of the God

of Silence, had not he ſtumbled on a dog that began to growl at him. At the ſame time he heard a window open, and ſomebody hem, as it were, to invite him to draw near. His heart was too tender to withſtand ſuch a temptation, ſo that, ſtopping ſhort, and liſtening with all his attention, he heard theſe words ſpoken with a whiſpering voice: "If it be you who yeſterday "left this place with ſuch tokens of the ſatis-"faction you had received, why do you come "ſo late?" Don Diego was ſomewhat ſtartled at this queſtion, but, yielding to his natural curioſity, anſwered in the ſame tone, "I am he, "open the door, and I will ſatisfy you." No ſooner had he ſpoken theſe words, but he heard the door open, and ſomebody ſaid to him, "Come in ſoftly." He did ſo without heſitation, or conſidering what the conſequence might be, concluding ſomething muſt be ventured, rather than let ſlip ſo favourable an opportunity, as he fancied Fortune here offered him. He was taken by the hand, and having been led through ſeveral doors, inſtead of the loving embraces he expected, he found himſelf baſely laid hold of behind, his arms taken away, and brought into a ſpacious room, where there were two candles burning on the table. Then he found himſelf in the hands of four able fellows,

who, by their countenances, promiſed him no good uſage. Looking about, he ſpied a venerable old man, who, in an angry tone, directing his diſcourſe to thoſe who held our adventurer, ſaid, " Why did you bring him before me alive? " why did not you throttle him as he came in?" Then turning to the priſoner, " Barbarian," ſaid he, " I can never believe you are of noble ex- " traction. Wicked man! What wrong could " this decrepit old age do you, that you ſhould " fully its honour upon the brink of the grave, " where the moſt infamous perſons deſire to be " laid without taint or blemiſh! If you had any " cauſe to thirſt after revenge upon me, why " did you not exerciſe it on this remainder of " life, which is now expiring, and not on my " reputation, which ought to be everlaſting? " But your deſign was to treat me worſe than " an executioner would have done, depriving " me of two lives at once. You were ſenſible, " that in ſtriking at my reputation, you ſtabbed " my heart. Your luſt has done me a wrong " of ſuch heinous nature, that though your life " falls a ſacrifice to me in this place, to atone " for your offence, yet you will ever remain " my debtor, and your death will rather ſerve " for a terror to others than be a ſatisfaction to " me. But away with him, let his throat be

" cut immediately, and his heart ripped out to " be thrown in his face, as a traitor. Yet be- " fore you carry him off, call in that mad wo- " man, that we may celebrate their nuptials " and funeral together."

Whilst the old man paused awhile, after speaking these words, in came a lady, whose eyes and countenance were so full of charms, that as soon as Don Diego spied her, all the terrors of death he had conceived by the dread- ful decree of his ancient judge, were dispelled, and gave way to the satisfaction of admiring that beautiful object. On the other hand, the lady seeing that stranger in the hands of her brothers, was so surprised and concerned, that her blood, flying up to her face, added much lustre to her natural perfection. Her father and brothers were amazed, and the prisoner stood in a rapture. There let us leave them awhile in that perplexity, to discover whence it proceed- ed.

A certain gentleman, whose name was Don Frederick, so great a darling of Nature and For- tune, that they seemed to contend who should heap the greatest favours on him; the latter having made him master of a most plentiful e- state, and the former derived him from a noble family, and endowed him with a generous soul,

virtuous inclinations, and a graceful perſon. This gentleman was paſſionately in love with the beauty, wit, and perfections of Fenicia, the lady we laſt ſpoke of, who, as ſhe triumphed in the conqueſts ſhe had gained over the moſt accompliſhed perſons about the court, ſo was ſhe herſelf ſubdued by the victory ſhe had gained over Don Frederick; either that ſhe had obſerved more worth in him, or that there was a greater ſympathy between their ſouls.

They had managed this mutual affection with ſuch ſecrecy, that her father and brothers, though they obſerved her actions moſt narrowly, could never diſcover the leaſt token of their familiarity. But as it is a matter of the greateſt difficulty to ſecure a happineſs which is in the power of another, who only ſtudies how to deſtroy it, ſo was this diſappointed and cut off, when leaſt expected, by the cunning and falſehood of Frederick; for after a long counterfeit ſhow of conſtancy, attended with many ſpecious expreſſions of a ſincere affection, he obtained the laſt favour of Fenicia, under a verbal promiſe of marriage. No ſooner had he gained this glorious conqueſt, and by its amorous wealth been plentifully rewarded for his many ſighs and tears, but he made Fenicia ſenſible, by many ſigns, that he had not the value for her ſhe

deſerved; and ſhe perceived by his behaviour that ſhe had but too much cauſe to repent of what ſhe had done. In fine, ſhe diſcovered ſo much coldneſs and ſo much impatience in him to be gone, after the accompliſhment of his will, that ſhe began to miſtruſt his performing the proteſtations he had made her. When he was gone, ſhe began to reflect on the fault ſhe had committed, and to apprehend ſhe was deluded by Frederick; deſpair ſeized her heart, and ſhe was in a labyrinth of confuſion. The remaining part of the night, and the next day, ſhe was ſo troubled with the thoughts of this affair, that at night, when the time drew near about which Frederick was to return, ſhe reſolved, though not without much difficulty, to make known her misfortune to her father and brothers, to prevent more fatal conſequences; that in caſe Frederick would break his promiſe, and not ſtand to his word, they might adviſe together of the means to compel him.

They were no ſtrangers to Don Frederick's name or quality, but they knew not his perſon. This both incenſed and confounded them; yet they loſt not much time in conſulting, or bewailing their misfortune, but conſidering the diſtemper was deſperate, they reſolved to apply a deſperate remedy, and to treat Don Frede-

tick, as, through miſtake, they were now going to uſe the innocent Don Diego. Fortune deſigning to make her ſport of him, brought him under Fenicia's windows, juſt at the time ſhe was upon the watch, expecting the approach of her ungrateful lover; her trouble, and the darkneſs of the night, made her incapable of diſtinguiſhing betwixt the true perſon and the falſe. As ſoon as ſhe heard ſhe thought it was Frederick, and upon that notion ſpoke thoſe words which charmed poor Don Diego, and engaged him in the danger where we left him.

Fenicia's father and brothers were reſolved to make Frederick marry her, either by his conſent or by force; or at leaſt to waſh out the ſtain he had laid on their honour with his blood. However, for the better managing of the affair, and leſt Frederick ſhould take a prejudice to Fenicia, they agreed ſhe ſhould pretend not to have diſcovered the ſecret; and that as it were to excuſe and reſcue him out of the hands of her brothers, ſhe ſhould poſitively affirm, that was none of the perſon who was with her the night before; that ſo he might imagine their familiarity had been diſcovered by the indiſcretion or falſehood of a ſervant, who was intruſted with the ſecret of their love.

Thus Fenicia, ſtartled to ſee a perſon un-

known to her taken in the ſnare ſhe had laid for Frederick, inſtead of the diſſimulation and artifice concerted among them, delivered herſelf with all poſſible ſincerity, ſaying, "Brothers, "you are miſtaken; this man you uſe ſo ill, and "wrong ſo much, is none of the perſon you "look for. This is not Frederick. Good God! "what a prodigious ſcandal is this after ſo great "a misfortune. I confeſs I tranſgreſſed moſt "heinouſly the laſt night, and brought a great "ſcandal upon your reputation; but now our "ſhame will be made known, ſince we have "acquainted this man with it, who will never "fail to divulge it."

The brothers were amazed to hear her, and whiſpered one another, "How notably ſhe diſ"ſembles, ſhe does it as if ſhe ſpoke truth." She perceiving their double miſtake, endeavoured all ſhe could to undeceive them, by repeated oaths and proteſtations, till at laſt they began to gaze upon one another, without ſpeaking a word, as not knowing what to think of that buſineſs. Don Diego, on the other hand, confirmed Fenicia's aſſertions, alleging they took him for another, for he had never been near their houſe before; that his name was Don Diego, and he belonged to the clergy, and therefore incapable of marrying; whereupon he pull-

ed out of his pocket ſome letters and other papers, which proved the truth of his words. The old man, father to Fenicia, was highly incenſed at his daughter, as the cauſe of all theſe unlucky accidents.

Love-Night by this time began to breathe more freely, believing he might now expect to be reſtored to his liberty; but fortune being reſolved to make trial of his courage, charged him again with freſh terrors. Fenicia's brothers in a rage to be thus impoſed upon, and at this unknown perſon's being made acquainted with their ſhame, conſulted together how to remedy this inconveniency; and their debate being near Don Diego, he could hear them talk of murdering him, the eldeſt making the propoſal, and the reſt conſenting to it. "We are unfortunate," ſaid he, "in all our undertakings; we have diſ-
"covered all our ſhame before this man, who
"will ſet it abroad everywhere as ſoon as it is
"day, to revenge the affront we have offered
"him. There is no ſtopping here, let us pro-
"ceed: We will lead him out, now it is night,
"to ſome by-place near the town wall, and
"cut his throat at the door of ſome bawdy-
"houſe, it will never be known who commit-
"ted the fact; and thus we may ſecure our-
"ſelves againſt the diſgrace our family might

" lie under." Some debates aroſe upon this bloody propoſal, but at length they all conſented to it.

Don Diego ſtill ſpoke not a word, hoping, if they carried him out of the houſe without holding, he might either ſave himſelf by his heels flying, or by his hands defending himſelf; but the deſign being made known to the good old man by the moſt compaſſionate of the conſpirators, he drew near Don Diego with his ſword in his hand, and trembling, ſaid to him, " Sir, " I repoſe more confidence in your diſcretion " than my ſons can do in your death. Be- " gone, in the name of God; fear no more " harm than what has been already done you. " I beg your pardon, and heartily entreat you " to pity my juſt ſorrow, and to grant that the " infamy of my houſe may ever lie buried in " the ſecrecy of your generous heart."

This ſaid, he reſtored him his ſword and guittar, both taken from him at his coming in; and leading him, without any noiſe, to the ſtreet door, offered to ſend ſomebody to wait on him, as far as he pleaſed. Don Diego returned thanks, and promiſed he would never make known to any perſon the misfortune of his houſe. Having eſcaped this immiuent danger, he made a vow to be leſs curious for the future,

and never to go into a place he did not know; but he kept not his promiſe; for when a man is once out of the mire, he never thinks of it again. He directed his courſe homeward, and finding himſelf ſtill under ſome diſorder, proceeding from the fright he had been put into, he thought fit to allay it with muſic; and accordingly, after ſome harmonious diſcords ſtruck upon his guittar, that inſtrument allowing of as many diſcords as concords, he ſeconded it with his voice, ſinging as follows:

SONG.

I.

As ſoon as fair Aurora wakes,
And ſpreads her bluſhes red as fire,
His journey brighter Phœbus takes,
Your beauty to admire.

II.

Your eyes the glorious ſtars outſhine,
Their rays afford us warmth and light,
Your preſence makes the day divine,
Your abſence diſmal night.

III.

No planet will pretend to ſhow
His head, when once your beams appear;
All then is here ſerene below,
And all above is clear.

IV.

The ſun to Jove does oft complain,
And at your mighty pow'r repines,
For that your eyes light land and main,
And breed the gold in mines.

V.

The heav'ns, which life to all things give,
Admire their workmanſhip in you;
But th' envious moon in ſpite does grieve,
And mourns in ſable hue.

VI.

The lilies, touch'd by your fair hand,
Do bluſh to think they're not ſo white,
Roſes look pale, when near you ſtand,
And ſhame them with your ſight.

VII.

All theſe perfections, all theſe charms,
Ungrateful coyneſs will deſtroy,
Unleſs you yield to Cupid's arms,
And his delights enjoy.

VIII.

Then do not practiſe how to ſcorn,
But all diſdainful thoughts remove,
The man to worſhip you was born,
Him you were born to love.

As he concluded his ſong, he found himſelf at his own door; and at the ſame time ſpied a man, who had followed him cloſe at the heels

all the way from Fenicia's houſe, and, ſtepping up to him, ſaid, "A word with you, Sir." Don Diego was ſomewhat ſurpriſed at this ſight, believing it was one of Fenicia's mad brothers, who, contrary to his father's command, was come to execute the ſentence there pronounced againſt him, and by that means to make known the diſhonour of his family; becauſe in all likelihood whatſoever paſſed betwixt them could not be done without noiſe. However, ſeeing but one ſingle man, he would not rouſe any of his ſervants, leſt he might think he was afraid, or ſuſpect he deſigned him foul play. He went boldly up to him, with his ſword in his hand, but not drawn, becauſe the other had not yet declared himſelf an enemy; and aſking what buſineſs he had with him, underſtood he was Frederick, that fortunate lover, who had triumphed over Fenicia's honour, and having been engaged in ſome buſineſs of high conſequence, could not repair to her till juſt Don Diego was coming out. This accident had ſtartled him very much, as believing that none but himſelf had admittance into that houſe, which occaſioned a jealouſy in him, and reſolving to clear his doubts, he had followed Love-Night, to diſcover who he was; till ſeeing him juſt ready to go into his houſe, he called upon him to ſatisfy his curioſity.

Urged on by jealouſy, he forgot all civility upon this occaſion; ſo that as ſoon as Don Diego was turned to him, he urged him to draw with ſome abuſive language. Love-Night, provoked by his inſolent words, threw down his guittar on the ſtones, which returned a ſound as if it complained of his unkindneſs. This done, he immediately put himſelf into a poſture to chaſtiſe the raſhneſs of his adverſary, whom he ſoon made ſenſible that he was better ſkilled at his weapons than he, or at leaſt more fortunate, for Frederick wanted neither ſkill nor courage. Don Diego preſſed hard upon him, and gave him two home thruſts, which were a ſufficient good proof of the ſtrength of his arm, and made him drop, crying out, "I am a dead man." Love-Night ſeeing him in this deplorable condition, and almoſt ſpeechleſs, took pity on his misfortune, called up his ſervants, had light brought out, and removed the unhappy gentleman into that apartment of his houſe he had reſerved for ſtrangers. There he was laid on a good bed, though then he ſeemed to be fitter for the grave. A prieſt and ſurgeon were ſent for, who both performed the duty of their function almoſt at the ſame time. The wounded man coming to himſelf, owned his raſhneſs, declaring he had been the aggreſſor, to clear his adverſary. Don Diego, on the other hand, be-

ing willing to calm Don Frederick's thoughts, and remove the ill impreſſion he had received as to Fenicia's fidelity, gave him the whole hiſtory of the danger he had been in at her houſe, on his account, being taken for him, and in the utmoſt hazard of loſing his life at the hands of her father and brothers. When he had ended his relation, he repreſented to him how perfidious an action it would be to deceive ſuch a beautiful lover, who had ſuffered herſelf to be perſuaded by his fair words, and to be conquered by his merit. In ſhort, he charged it ſo home to his conſcience, and ſpoke ſo feelingly to his ſoul, ſhowing the wrong he did to ſo many perſons, and the danger he run in having four brothers for his profeſſed enemies, that he prevailed with him to proteſt, in the preſence of all that were there, that he would perform his promiſe made to Fenicia as ſoon as recovered.

Heaven heard and ſeconded this juſt vow; for from that moment he began viſibly to recover, and not long after was as good as his word. To this effect he deſired Don Diego, with whom he had contracted a ſingular friendſhip, to go viſit Fenicia from him, and give her freſh aſſurances of his fidelity; ſtill reſerving it to himſelf to give her an account ſome other time of

the encounter betwixt them, for fear ſhe ſhould be in trouble about his recovery. Love-Night thought it a great happineſs that he was pitched upon to deliver ſo pleaſing a meſſage to the lady.

He went to her houſe, and found her labouring under the greateſt affliction, becauſe ſhe had never heard of her Frederick ſince ſhe reſigned up her honour to him. She was ſick a-bed, and her father in the ſame condition, both of them overwhelmed with grief, begging of Heaven, what was not in the power of man to grant, which was either death, or the retrieving of their honour. Fenicia's four brothers, enraged at the affront they thought all the world could read on their faces, hearing no news of the perſon who had ſo diſhonoured them, believed he had abſented himſelf, and upon this ſuppoſition reſolved to diſperſe themſelves, and to go to ſeveral places, in hopes to meet and take a bloody revenge for their wrong.

As Fenicia and her father were diſcourſing about their diſaſter, deſpairing of ever receiving any ſatisfaction, Love-Night entered their chamber with a joyful countenance, which teſtified the good news he brought them. No doubt but the two ſick perſons were amazed to ſee him, as not knowing what deſign could bring

him thither. To eaſe them of their pain and anxiety, he ſuccinctly related the occaſion of his viſit, and gave them ſuch aſſurances of the truth of his words, that Fenicia and her father, raviſhed with exceſs of joy, believed this was ſome miracle or enchantment, conſidering that the perſon, whom, but a few days before, they would have put to death, was now come to reſtore them to life. They received him as an angel, and returned thanks to Heaven for having pitied their misfortunes. From that time Fenicia recovered her former graces, which had ſuffered much by her afflictions, the good old man revived, and Frederick, being perfectly cured, went with Don Diego to ratify the promiſe he had brought from him. His preſence gave Fenicia freſh life, and he ſaluted her father as a ſon-in-law, and her as his bride. Meſſengers were inſtantly ſent to recal her brothers, who being ſummoned to be preſent at the recovery of their honour, haſted to Madrid. Frederick's kindred and friends were invited, and, by a general conſent, their nuptials were celebrated, to the ſatisfaction of all parties concerned; where Don Diego was honoured as a principal gueſt, for having been the chief cauſe of that happy ſucceſs.

ADVENTURE II.

THE memory of paſt accidents might have been a ſufficient warning to Don Diego for the ſecuring of his future quiet; but the dangers he had eſcaped could not reſtrain him from continuing his extravagant cuſtoms. The glory he had acquired by his late eſcape made him hope he ſhould be no leſs ſucceſsful in other adventures. After the marriage of Frederick he ſtaid at home ſome time, indulging ſuch commendable diverſions as other men are wont to take; but ſoon gave way again to his unruly temper, Amazor's good advice being of no force to reſtrain him.

This Amazor was a perſon of learning and experience, under whoſe tuition Don Diego had ſpent ſome part of his younger years, and learned all he knew of literature and civil converſation. Nor was he to blame, though he had not been more ſucceſsful in his pupil, as having never omitted any thing in his power to reſtrain him; but it is almoſt impoſſible for human foreſight to gain the aſcendant over a mind ſo much addicted to its perverſe habits as that of Don Diego. Amazor nevertheleſs reſolved to make another trial, and endeavour by

new perſuaſions to ſubdue that rebellious temper. He waited for a fair opportunity, and diſcourſed him after this manner:

"Don Diego," ſaid he, "you give me juſt "occaſion to reckon myſelf the moſt unfortu- "nate of all men of my profeſſion. After ſo "many years ſpent in your company; after ſo "many admonitions and remonſtrances as I "have made, and ſo many examples as I have "laid before you, I muſt ſtill be reproached "with not having been able to correct the per- "verſe inclinations of your infancy, as not ha- "ving led you in the paths of virtue. Muſt I "loſe the juſt reward I could hope for my la- "bours in making you a good man? Shall I, "inſtead of that due reward, ſee myſelf expoſed "to the reflections of all that either ſee or hear "of the unaccountable life you lead, who will "charge me with neglect in employing that lit- "tle ſkill I have in educating youth? But lay- "ing aſide what concerns me, have not you "ſenſe enough to perceive that you are the "ſport of all companies, and the ſcorn of all "your equals? Do not you obſerve that every "body rails at the extravagant and ridiculous "way you have found of paſſing away your life, "ſo different from the reſt of mankind? It may "truly be ſaid you are of a black and dark diſ-

" poſition, ſince it makes you hate and ſhun " day-light, which is ſo pleaſing to all the world. " Were there any pretence to excuſe this mad- " neſs; had you any amorous intrigues to pre- " vail with you to love the darkneſs of the " night as you do, none would wonder at it; " nay, you would be thought diſcreet, as ſup- " poſing you made uſe of that time to conceal " your affections, and prevent the ſcandal they " might give; but to ſuffer yourſelf, without " any occaſion, to be led away by ſo unreaſon- " able a humour, which is prejudicial to your " health, and hourly expoſe your life to dan- " gers, as appears by your laſt adventure, is too " viſible a madneſs, and which cannot any way " be palliated. If you continue any longer " theſe extravagant night rambles, you will " ſoon be involved in ſome deplorable misfor- " tune, and perhaps loſe both your life and ho- " nour, which is a double death. The affection " I have always bore you, obliges me to give " you this one admonition more, that, if after it " you come to any diſaſter, as you are in the " ready way to it, none may have occaſion to " ſay, you wanted advice and admonitions to " give over, but rather that it may be known " you were the only cauſe of your own calami- " ties. For my own part, I quit you and your

" houſe; I will not be a witneſs to the miſchiefs " that threaten you, nor ſee my time, labour, " and inſtructions, ſo ill beſtowed."

This ſaid, he made to the door to be gone, and leave the houſe; but Don Diego interpoſed, endeavouring to ſtop him. Thus they ſtruggled together through affection, not in anger. At laſt Don Diego promiſed to reform, and follow his advice. As a proof of his ſincerity, he laid by his arms, and for two days led quite another ſort of life than he was wont to do, like the reſt of mankind, making uſe of night and day, according to the courſe of nature. But this method being a conſtraint upon his humour, the very third night he began to repent him of well-doing, and, being reſtleſs in his bed, to deteſt Amazor's ſeverity; calling him a frantic pedant, a tyrannic uſurper over his liberty, and a thouſand other opprobrious names. Thus was he diverting himſelf when he heard a coach in the ſtreet, which ſtopping near his houſe, gave him the opportunity of delighting his ears with the muſic of a lute. He got up and went to the window, and ſoon after a charming voice, which ſeemed to be a woman's, ſang to the inſtrument as follows:—

SONG.

I.

Go nimble thought, take flight
To him that has my heart,
Aſk why he ſhuns my ſight,
To him my griefs impart.

II.

Fly thought, and quickly find
The iſſue of my fate,
Whether he ſtill is kind,
Or now begins to hate.

III.

See if he does not ſhare
That heart which ſhould be mine,
With any other fair,
Whom now he thinks divine.

IV.

Then back to me again,
And tell if falſe he prove,
For 'twill not give me pain,
But cure me of my love.

After theſe verſes, the ſame voice ſung others, but all of them ſo ſatirical and biting, that all who heard them were extremely ſcandalized, and particularly a courtezan, or woman of the town, that lived near Don Diego, to whom they were directed, and who liſtened to them,

or at leaſt might have done ſo. She was a friend to, and under the protection of our adventurer, and therefore he carefully obſerved every word that might offend her. This put him again into another fit of curſing Amazor's advice. He dreſſed himſelf in a hurry, laid hold of his target and ſword, made by the famous Hernandez of Toledo, and without ſtaying to button his coat, or tie up his garters, flew out of his houſe like lightning, to find out the perſon that had ſung that ſcandalous lampoon upon his neighbour. He was ſo enraged, that though the coach was then got far off, he ſoon overtook it, all in a ſweat. He never gave over calling out till he made the coachman ſtop, and then let fly ſuch a peal of foul language againſt thoſe who were in it, that had they not been lewd people, and uſed to ſuch ſalutes, much blood muſt have been ſhed. They, inſtead of falling into a paſſion, laughed heartily, and broke many jeſts upon his perſon, his words, and the dreſs he was in, and bidding the coachman drive on, left Don Diego quite beſide himſelf, and out of breath, his paſſion had ſo heated him. However, he had ſtill ſtrength and folly enough to run after the coach, and obſerve where it ſtopped, deſigning to take a more convenient time to ſeek his ſatisfaction, with leſs

danger to himſelf, and more diſgrace to her who had done the wrong.

Let us now unravel this myſtery, and diſcover who theſe perſons were, for the better underſtanding of our ſtory. The lady whom Don Diego protected, was Carcelia, and ſhe who came to provoke her, Fauſtina, both of them ſo much alike in their life, cuſtoms and condition, that what was ſaid in commendation or diſpraiſe of the one might be fitly applied to the other. Don Diego, upon this occaſion, ſhowed his wit and art, for he found means to get a copy of thoſe ſatirical verſes, the contents whereof had ſo nettled Carcelia, and thought that changing the name of Carcelia into that of Fauſtina, they would be ſufficiently altered, and ſhe be abundantly mortified with her own weapons. In ſhort, he had juſt cauſe to admire his project; for, reading the verſes, he found them ſo pat to his purpoſe, that he ſuſpected the author of them had given a good proof of his malicious wit; for, under pretence of falling foul on Carcelia, he abuſed Fauſtina in the higheſt degree, making her own tongue and voice the inſtruments to publiſh her lewdneſs, and other vices of her irregular life.

Don Diego imparted his deſign to ſome perſons much better diſpoſed to purſue any ſcan-

dalous undertaking, than to approve of ſuch as was virtuous. They heightened his paſſion, magnifying the wrong, and offered to have a ſhare in executing his revenge. In this grave council it was decreed, that they would give a ſerenade with all ſorts of ridiculous inſtruments, which were two ſow-gelder's horns, two tinker's whiſtles of ſeveral ſizes, two cracked bells, two rattles of different magnitudes, two guittars, and two fiddles out of tune, without frets, and played on by unſkilful hands, and ſome kettles, one bigger than another, to make the more complete ſet of muſic.

Item, That there ſhould be a dialogue compoſed in verſe, to be ſpoken by two young men, the one repreſenting Fauſtina, and the other her ſiſter Popea, clothed as near their ordinary habit as might be.

That the ſubject of the dialogue ſhould be a falling out between the two ſiſters, by which means they might expoſe the truth of their ſcandalous life.

That this dialogue ſhould be got by heart by ſuch as had a ſtrong voice, and could pronounce it diſtinctly.

That there ſhould be ſeveral formal rehearſals of it, before the ſolemn day, for fear of being out.

That Don Diego ſhould provide a comical triumphal chariot, of the nature of thoſe uſed in Shrovetide, which was to be all beſet with lighted flambeaux, the better to ſhow the perſons within; the ſaid open chariot to ſerve for a theatre to recite the dialogue.

That the chariot ſhould be placed before Fauſtina's windows, which ſhe ſhould be obliged to open by fair or foul means, that ſhe might not pretend to be ignorant of the affront done her.

Amidſt ſo many madmen met in conſultation, there happened to be one wiſer than the reſt, who uſed a thouſand good arguments to divert them from this folly, repreſenting the ſcandal it would give; but there being nobody to ſecond him, his good advice was rewarded with a general laughter, and he for ever baniſhed their ſociety. Next they made choice of the beſt poet in the company to compoſe the dialogue, which was ſtuffed with all the ribaldry and infamous abuſive language his muſe could inſpire, to the great ſatisfaction of Don Diego and his aſſociates.

This important and grave declamation requiring to be well conned, there were abundance of merry meetings, ſuppers and collations, to this purpoſe, at Don Diego's houſe, and at his

expence, wherein Bacchus was always preſident inſtead of Apollo. When all theſe choice actors had got their parts, and were prepared to play their droll, Don Diego would have them make the laſt rehearſal in the preſence of Carcelia, who, with many other nymphs of her own ſtamp, repaired to his houſe; where after a plentiful collation, ſhe preſided at this ſolemn act, and gave her advice where ſhe thought any thing might be added or left out of this inſolent piece of revenge, which ſhe looked upon as a juſt puniſhment. The work having ſtood this wiſe cenſure, and being judged fit to appear in public, it was ordered to be performed the next night without any further delay, for fear the ſecret ſhould be divulged, and come to the knowledge of the parties concerned, who being backed by the power of their protectors, that were great and numerous, might not only diſappoint the project, but make examples of the contrivers.

About midnight they began to provide all the inſtruments deſigned for this helliſh ſerenade, but without any noiſe, their intention being not to diſturb any body, but ſuch as had the ill fortune to live near enough the ladies mentioned in the dialogue, for whom the entertainment was contrived. The ridiculous machine

of the triumphal chariot began to move, being drawn by ſix ſtately courſers, commonly called porters, who, coming near the end of their journey, quite ſpent with toil and thirſt, found all their labour was in vain, and their progreſs diſappointed, the end of the ſtreet where their buſineſs lay being barricadoed. The caſe was, that a gentleman of the greateſt quality, who lived in that ſtreet, being dangerouſly ill, had, with the magiſtrates leave, cauſed poſts to be ſet up in the ſtreet with rails acroſs them, to hinder carriages paſſing that way, and diſturbing his reſt. Don Diego and his gang made a halt, and after beſtowing a plentiful peal of curſes againſt the rails, reſolved to force them, and go through with their enterpriſe. This was ſoon done; for every man putting his hand to the work, they had it all down in a moment.

The machine was now near the place where the ſcurrilous droll was to be acted, when the ſick gentleman's ſteward arrived, attended by the chief of the ſervants, who had been at the apothecary's for ſome medicines they had been to ſee prepared, according to the doctor's preſcription. They, much ſurpriſed to find the barrier thrown down, and to hear ſuch a dreadful noiſe in the ſtreet, went up to the likelieſt perſons in the gang, and very courteouſly ac-

quainted them, that their maſter was very ſick, that he was ſuch a man of quality, and therefore deſired them to withdraw without making any more noiſe. Thoſe who heard this account could return no anſwer till they had firſt conſulted Don Diego as their chief; who being called to them, put them off with good words, which took no effect. As ſoon as the ſervants were got into their houſe, Don Diego's companions began to clear up their inſtruments, making ſuch a helliſh noiſe as alarmed all the ſtreet. The poor ſick gentleman, who had his phyſician watching by him, inquiring what ſudden ſtorm this was, his ſervants told him what they had met. Immediately all the ſervants were called up, footmen, grooms, coachmen, and all the reſt, who were very numerous; and underſtanding the inſolency committed againſt the reſpect due to their maſter, and the regard to his indiſpoſition, prepared to go lay thoſe turbulent ſpirits by dint of ſwords, of halberts, and all other weapons that came to hand, and paſſion provided. In this poſture they ſallied out upon them, and the flambeaux being lighted, and the dialogue beginning, they made directly to the chariot, which they broke in pieces, overturning all that were in it. Don Diego and his guard came up immediately to their reſcue, and

there enſued a furious fray, many heads broken, and limbs maimed on both ſides. Having thus vented their choler, they parted by conſent, and every one carried off the blows he had got.

Fauſtina and Popea, who were at their windows, being informed that this wonderful concert was provided for them, returned joyfully to bed, for having been ſo glorioufly revenged, without knowing any thing of the matter. However, their joy was not laſting; for ſo great was the authority of the ſick gentleman, their neighbour, that he, underſtanding that their infamous life was the cauſe of thoſe night diſturbances, complained to the magiſtrates, who baniſhed them the court; and thus the ſecond affront was worſe than the firſt. Some of the combatants on both ſides were ſecured and fined; Don Diego, who was the contriver of all this trouble, ſlipt his neck out of the halter, pretending he was to be tried by another court, and having powerful friends; for, excepting this extravagancy of night-rambling, he was a pleaſant companion. Thus he ſaved himſelf out of the clutches of ſome little griping officers of juſtice, who would gladly have laid hold of him, or rather of his purſe, to get a good ſqueeze out of it.

ADVENTURE III.

AMAZOR, vexed within himſelf at this ſecond mad adventure of Don Diego, and finding he was delivered from the purſuit of the officers, though not without much trouble, and many weary ſteps, reſolved to rid himſelf of all the vexation his pupil's extravagancy gave him. He apprehended the world laid all Don Diego's follies to his charge, as having been his tutor; and therefore to clear himſelf from that falſe imputation, thought himſelf obliged to withdraw from his company, that he might give a public demonſtration of his diſlike to that diſorderly courſe of life. He acquainted Don Diego with his deſign, who was not now of the ſame mind he had been before, when he made the ſame propoſal; but inſtead of endeavouring to diſſuade, and oppoſe his departure, as he did the other time, now gave him his way, and told him very coldly, "That he was his own maſter, "and might do as he thought fit." Amazor ſurpriſed to be thus taken at his word, was obliged in honour to do as he ſaid, and went off accordingly. Very few days were paſt, before he perceived that his poſitiveneſs coſt him

dear; he knew not before what it was to live upon his own, nor was he ſenſible of being maintained by another; whilſt he enjoyed it, he thought nothing of it; for we never truly underſtand the value of things till we have loſt them.

Being weary of theſe burdens, and willing to be eaſed of them, he applied himſelf to ſome perſons of note, who had an influence over Don Diego, to reconcile him to his pupil again, and get him reſtored to his houſe in the ſame condition he was before. It was a difficult matter to obtain this favour, unleſs to Amazor's diſadvantage; for it was upon condition that he ſhould loſe the authority of a tutor, that every one might live after his own faſhion; that there ſhould be a liberty of behaviour, and that one ſhould not find fault with what the other did. For the better performance of theſe articles, Amazor was to lodge in a different part of the houſe from Don Diego. On theſe terms peace was concluded, Don Diego thinking it a great happineſs that he had ſhaken off the yoke of this pedantic juriſdiction, as he ſtyled the government of Amazor.

Don Diego's natural inclination to ſinging, and playing on muſical inſtruments, and the continual practice of it, had rendered him a great

proficient, even among the beſt maſters; and it being a certain rule, that like inclinations produce friendſhip, he became familiarly acquainted with a young lady, ſo perfectly ſkilled in muſic, that ſhe might be reckoned a tenth muſe. He engaged himſelf ſo deep in her affection, and ſo entirely devoted himſelf to it, that he quite forgot all his other affairs. Whatſoever proofs he could give her of his paſſion, yet he never obtained any other favour from her than what modeſt converſation would allow; and that always before other women. He ſpent a whole ſpring and ſummer in this purſuit, and yet the autumn afforded him no harveſt; he always hoped, but nothing came of it.

This lady, whoſe name was Sirena, a name ſuitable to her inclinations, was married to a man of quality and honour; but ſo wonderful jealous, that whatſoever he imagined ſeemed to him moſt certainly true. A long journey which had kept him a conſiderable time from Madrid, gave Don Diego ſufficient opportunity to make his addreſſes, and Sirena the opportunity of diverting herſelf as ſhe thought fit; but after her huſband's return ſhe was much abridged of her liberty. She gave Don Diego notice of it, deſiring he would refrain from walking about her houſe, as he did continually, for fear her huſ-

band ſhould take notice of it; and appointed him to meet her the following night at ten o'clock, in the next houſe to her own, which belonged to a neighbour, her confident, where they might diſcourſe freely of the means of continuing their friendſhips; and that he might not miſtake the place of rendezvous, there ſhould be ſomebody in the ſtreet to direct him.

Don Diego received this meſſage with a great deal of joy, thinking what he had ſo long hoped for was at length come to paſs, and that Sirena would now beſtow on him the reward his long ſervices had deſerved. When the hour was come, the gallant dreſſed himſelf to the beſt advantage, that he might make the better appearance; and provided himſelf with defenſive arms againſt all accidents. He walked out in a very haſty manner, for fear of coming laſt to the place appointed; but when he came thither, and ſaw nobody in the ſtreet to direct him what he was to do, he was forced to arm himſelf with patience, expecting to hear from Sirena. Sometimes he walked, and other whiles ſtood ſtill and liſtened, complaining of his fate, when one of Sirena's maids came to the door, and told him, that her miſtreſs had been obliged to go abroad awalking, to take the freſh air, with her huſband, ſhe knew not whither, and therefore

desired him to come again two hours after. These words went to his heart, for he expected to have met with better entertainment; but after pausing awhile, he concluded that Sirena could not but comply so far with her husband, and therefore, like her, he must resolve to have patience, and expect her return, which to him seemed an age off. He endeavoured to divert his uneasiness, walking backwards and forwards, and at length discovered another man in the same sort of motion, waiting to speak to a lady in the neighbourhood of Sirena. Don Diego resolved to leave him a clear stage, for fear of being known, and giving scandal; for he was a discreet lover, and accordingly walked away to the Prado, or the meadows without the town, to wait the time appointed him. The air proving cooler than usual, and the night darker, made the place all hushed and solitary; for though that is the place to which all the gentlemen and ladies go a-airing, there was nobody in it then, because it was midnight. Here he had leisure to divert his thoughts, without fearing to be disturbed or incommoded by any passing by. He walked twice the whole length of the place, fetching large steps, and hastily, as if that had any way shortened the time set him to return; and when he was upon the point of

going off, he heard a woman complain not far from him, who ſpoke theſe words: "Can you "be ſo falſe, thou dear better half of my ſoul, "as to bring me hither to murder me?" Don Diego pitying her, obſerved from whence thoſe doleful accents came, and without thinking of his appointed return, made up thither with his target in one hand, and his ſword in the other, to ſuccour the perſon that ſeemed to be in ſuch danger. He had ſcarce gone twenty ſteps, before he met with a coach drawn by a pair of horſes, ſhut on the one ſide, and open on the other, and at a little diſtance a man a-foot, and a woman kneeling before him. The man hearing ſomebody approach her, went to meet him with ſword in hand. "Stand," ſaid he to Don Diego. "Do you ſtand," replied Diego boldly, "and know that I come to puniſh you for "your baſeneſs towards that poor woman, who "has no other defence but her tears, which are "powerful enough againſt a generous heart, "unknown to you, ſince her complaints do not "move you." The man finding his honour concerned, returned the anſwer with his ſword. Don Diego put by the paſs, and ſo they fell to it, each endeavouring to put an end to his adverſary; but Diego proving either more ſkilful or more fortunate, gave him two thruſts one

upon another, which laid him flat, crying, "Sweet Jeſus help me, I am a dead man;" and ſo he fainted away. Don Diego immediately ran to take up the woman, who dropped down for grief, conceived at the laſt words ſhe heard him utter that would have killed her, believing he was dead; for whether ſhe apprehended ſome ill conſequence of that accident, or that ſhe really loved the man, Don Diego found her in a ſwoon, and quite ſenſeleſs. He took her up, put her into the coach, and playing the part of a coachman, drove directly to his own houſe, where he beat up Amazor, who lay in his own apartment, made him riſe and come out without a candle, for fear the neighbours ſhould ſee any thing. They both together laid the woman on a bed, without calling any ſervant to their aſſiſtance, becauſe there is no ſecret where ſuch are concerned. Then Don Diego ſaid to Amazor, "Here is a woman I know no-"thing of, but I have ſaved her life. I hap-"pened to be in a place where a barbarous fel-"low would have murdered her; ſhe is ſtill in "a ſwoon with the fright; take care of her I "charge you." This ſaid, he went out again, got up into the coach-box, and drove to a very good churchman's houſe, whom he called aloud, deſiring him to look out at his window,

which he did, and then Don Diego, without naming him, ſaid, "Sir, Your reverence will be "pleaſed to underſtand, that this coach was ac- "cidentally found in the ſtreet, without either "maſter or coachman; I leave it with you, be- "ing fully ſatisfied that in your juſtice you will "uſe all poſſible means to have it reſtored to "the right owner. Farewell." He expected no anſwer, but made away immediately, leaving the good man full of confuſion. Thence he took his way towards Sirena's houſe, very much diſturbed in mind, as fearing he had ſlipt his time, it being an hour later than the time appointed him to return. Being come to the door, he found Sirena's maid, who told him her miſtreſs was not yet come; that ſhe muſt needs begone to her mother's with her huſband, ſhe being a rich widow, from whom ſhe never returned empty handed. That in caſe ſhe was there, he need not expect her that night, or perhaps in a week; for ſhe was ſo very fond of her mother, that whenſoever ſhe went thither, there was no getting her away. This long ſtory raiſed ſome jealouſy in Don Diego, who was ſharp enough to ſuſpect the maid might put upon him; but not knowing what the deſign of it might be, he would not aſk any more queſtions, but pretended to believe her, and be gone.

Thus exerciſing his patience, he took a great compaſs about Sirena's houſe, in which he ſpent above half an hour, and paſſing again before the door, he found it full of officers, conſtables, and rabble, making a mighty noiſe. Drawing near, and aſking the occaſion of all that buſtle, they told him, that they had juſt brought in Don Leander, huſband to the beautiful Sirena, dangerouſly wounded, and that it was not known whom he had fought with. Hearing this, he thought it not convenient to ſtay any longer there, becauſe being known to have made love to his wife, if he were found there armed, as he then was, he might be taken up, and it would be a hard matter to clear his innocence, as he really imagined; for he could not think he was any way concerned in that action. He haſted home to ſend out one of his ſervants to bring him a true account of what had happened to Sirena's huſband.

By the way he much lamented that poor man's misfortune, wiſhing that he who had committed that crime might be ſeverely puniſhed; not that he had any kindneſs for Leander, but for Sirena's ſake, becauſe if he ſhould die without iſſue, ſhe would loſe all ſhe had, the next heirs coming in for the eſtate. But let us

go back, and ſee in what condition the unfortunate woman Don Diego carried home is in.

We left her half dead, in the hands of Amazor, who, deſiring to relieve her in that diſtreſs, lighted a candle, and put a little compoſition of alkermes into her mouth, which revived her ſpirits. Opening her eyes, ſhe was amazed to find herſelf in a ſtrange place, and by an unknown man, being uncertain whether it was he that ſaved her from death. "Sir," ſaid ſhe, "if "you are the perſon whoſe courage and valour "ſaved my life, I conjure you, by that fame ge- "nerofity, to ſave me from ſcandal! and to that "purpoſe, I beſeech you, without aſking who I "am, if you know it not already, to conduct "me, ere it be day, before the church of St. "Jerome. That will be the greateſt favour you "can do me, in the miſerable condition your "charity has reduced me to. Alas! the man "you killed was my huſband. It is true he de- "ſigned againſt my life, and you prevented "him. I return you my thanks, but am not "obliged to fate, for I could wiſh with all my "heart our doom had been changed."

Amazor was much amazed at theſe words, and being diſcreet, concluded it muſt be Don Diego to whom the lady directed her diſcourſe,

and that this was ſome unlucky buſineſs, from which it was convenient to extricate him. So that obſerving the woman's diſorder, he gueſſed ſhe did not know Don Diego, and that he ought to take the advantage of her ignorance, as he did very ingeniouſly. "Madam," ſaid he, "I "am unworthy of all thoſe compliments you "beſtow on me, you muſt keep them for him "that better deſerves them; you may perceive "by my mien and garb that I am better at my "pen than my ſword. In ſhort, I am altoge- "ther a ſtranger to what you tell me. I know "not who you are, unleſs you be an angel, for "your beauty makes me think you ſo. But "without inquiring any farther, or loſing the "time you count ſo precious, ſince you deſire "to be gone from hence before day, I offer to "conduct you to the church of St. Jerome, up- "on condition, that before we go out of this "room, you will give me leave to vail your "face, and hoodwink your eyes, and that you "ſwear you will not diſcover yourſelf till I leave "you; aſſuring you, upon the word of a Chri- "ſtian, that it ſhall be done with all the reſpect "due to your perſon, and that I am extremely "concerned to be forced to uſe you ſo ſevere- "ly, and in ſuch a miſtruſtful manner; but I "muſt tell you, that it is abſolutely neceſſary

"ſo to do, for ſeveral reaſons, which I deſire "you will be pleaſed to inquire no more than "I do after who you are."

The poor woman finding herſelf at the mercy of that man, and conſidering in what courteous manner he diſcourſed her, wholly reſigned herſelf to his diſcretion, promiſing upon oath not to touch her face without his conſent. Amazor preſently made a Cupid of her; he bound her eyes, and led her out of the houſe. Every ſtep he went with her he looked behind him; every little noiſe he fancied was the watch coming to lay hold of him; and in his fright he got to the church of St. Jerome. That being the place to which the lady had deſired to be conducted, he put himſelf into a poſture to leave her, and bidding her farewell, run away as ſwift as if he had flown, fear finding wings, and got into Don Diego's houſe, bleſſing God for having delivered him from that great danger.

The lady finding herſelf free, and that her guide had left her, unbound her eyes, and perceived ſhe was by St. Jerome, it being then day; and thinking ſhe had been in a dream, or come out of ſome enchantment, ſhe took ſhelter in her mother's houſe, which was near that church.

Don Diego got home almoſt as ſoon as A-

mazor, and found him panting, and quite out of breath, after the race he had run. Though our adventurer was extremely melancholy on account of the many diſappointments he had met as to his expectations, he did not omit to aſk Amazor, whence all that commotion he ſaw in him proceeded. Amazor, in a very diſcontented manner, replied, "Theſe are the effects of your raſhneſs, which are the cauſe of much trouble to thoſe who have more regard for your life and honour than yourſelf." Don Diego being amazed at theſe words, Amazor explained himſelf, telling him every particular from the time he left that unknown lady with him. He repeated the words ſhe ſaid to him, and declared how he had conducted her blindfolded, and what reaſons he had for ſo doing. Don Diego conſidering what a good office Amazor had done him, as being very apprehenſive that he might be called to an account for what had happened in the Prado, embraced him, in teſtimony of being ſenſible of the obligation. Whilſt they were diſcourſing together concerning the particulars of this ſtrange adventure, they heard knocking at the ſtreet door, as if the perſon were in haſte to come in. Don Diego and Amazor, in a conſternation, as being before diſpoſed to apprehend danger, looked

upon one another, as dumb as two ſtatues. At length having heard the knocking repeated a third time, Don Diego went himſelf to the door, where he found a boy, who brought him a letter from Sirena. That charming name reſtored peace to his thoughts, and made his blood circulate freely. The meſſenger being brought in, he read the letter, which was to this effect:—

Sirena's Letter to Don Diego.

" Don Leander, overcome by his continual " jealouſy, and incenſed by a perfidious ſervant, " who informed him our viſits had been ſo fa- " miliar, that his honour was concerned, laſt " night uſed me after a moſt baſe and treache- " rous manner. He aſked me to go abroad to " my mother's, a viſit ſo unuſual with him, that " I was fain at other times to court him long " before he would conſent to it. I innocently " made ready to comply with his deſires, for " fear he ſhould ſuſpect any thing, though at " the ſame time it troubled me very much to " fail of the aſſignation I had given you. We " went out, and at the end of the ſtreet found " a coach he had ordered to be there, and put- " ting me into it, ſaid, we will go ſee your mo- " ther to-morrow, let us go to-night and take

" the freſh air in the Prado. I would not order
" the coach to come to our door, that I might
" not be obliged to bring our neighbours with
" us; if it be not too late when we come back,
" we will call and bid your mother good night.
" What you pleaſe, ſaid I. We took ſo great a
" compaſs about the town before we came in
" to the Prado, that it was almoſt midnight
" when we got thither; and though the wea-
" ther was cold and cloudy, yet we alighted.
" He told me I ſhould hear a page that ſung
" delicately, and then ordered the coachman,
" being the only perſon that was with us, to go
" call him, at a gentleman's houſe, who was his
" friend, and he ſaid lived hard by there. The
" coachman went his way, and whether he had
" far to go, or was inſtructed by Don Leander,
" he came not back. No ſooner was he gone,
" but Don Leander, ſpeaking in a hoarſe tone,
" denoting the great paſſion he was in, began
" to lay before me the wrongs he pretended I
" had done him, and without allowing me to
" make any defence, pronounced ſentence of
" death againſt me, which having been already
" both party and judge, he reſolved immediate-
" ly to execute. Finding him thus cruelly re-
" ſolved, I endeavoured, by all manner of ſub-
" miſſion and tears, to mollify his heart, and

" move him to compaſſion; but inſtead of in-
" clining to mercy, he grew more enraged.
" Then Heaven, who protects innocence, raiſed
" me I know not what man, who coming like
" an apparition, ſtood before Don Leander, juſt
" as he was going to bury his dagger in my
" breaſt; he called, and obliged him with ſharp
" words to engage him. Don Leander left me,
" and made up to him with his ſword in his
" hand; but being come within reach of their
" weapons, the ſtranger gave him two thruſts,
" which laid him on the ground, crying he was
" a dead man. His cries ſtruck me to the heart,
" ſo that I fainted away. When I came to my
" ſenſes, I found myſelf in a ſtrange houſe, and
" ſaw a man by me, whom my diſordered fancy
" took for the ſame that wounded Don Lean-
" der, but afterwards found he was no ſwordſ-
" man; therefore dreading the great miſchief
" that threatened me, I entreated him, without
" diſcovering my name, to conduct me to the
" monaſtery of St. Jerome. He granted it up-
" on condition he might blindfold me. What
" he meant by it I know not, unleſs it were to
" prevent my knowing the houſe I was in. I
" was ſo earneſt to be out of that place, that I
" conſented to that hard condition, and ſubmit-
" ted to him. He aſked for my handkerchief,

" and bound my eyes with it, and taking me " by the hand, led me like a blind body to the " place I had told him, where he left me, bid- " ding me farewell; which done, he vaniſhed ſo " ſuddenly, that when I pulled off my handker- " chief, I found myſelf all alone. I had reſol- " ved to go to my mother, but have ſince " thought it better to take ſanctuary in a houſe " conſecrated to God, which the bearer will tell " you. I will there expect farther news from " Leander, and your advice how to diſpoſe of " myſelf as ſhall be moſt convenient. Farewell."

Don Diego and Amazor gazed upon one ano- ther at every line of the letter they read, ma- king many exclamations, and admiring ſuch wonderful accidents. Our adventurer was in a rage to ſee that fortune had put into his power the bleſſing he ſo eagerly purſued without his knowing it, and that he had it in his houſe when he went abroad to ſeek it. He curſed his fate, and repreſenting to himſelf the idea of the thing inſtead of the ſubſtance, " Dear Sire- " na," ſaid he, " how ſhall I dare to appear in " your preſence? Will not you have juſt cauſe " to believe me unworthy of the favours Hea- " ven beſtowed on me, as a reward for having " hazarded my life to ſave yours. But what do

"I talk of, since I deserved nothing from you "on account of this action, as not knowing it "was for you that I performed it; I may also "say, I have not been faulty in letting slip this "precious opportunity that offered to make me "happy."

Amazor interrupted these chimerical excursions, representing to him how much better Heaven had ordered it, for avoiding the many misfortunes they might have fallen into by the severe search the officers of justice might make into that affair. He told him, they might perhaps have been both taken together, and been a disgrace to their families, and an example to posterity; that he advised him to forbear such visits; but that before he quite broke off with Sirena, he did not disapprove of his going to see her, in order to comfort and endeavour to do her any service, as far as his life and honour were not concerned. And forasmuch as mistrust is the mother of security, he offered to bear him company, though that action was not well becoming his profession, and to go to the monastery the messenger was to show, before him, to see whether this was not some deceitful contrivance to ensnare them.

Don Diego yielding to his wholesome advice, commended Amazor's discretion; and to lose

no time, they both went along with the meſſenger. Sirena was all plain-dealing; they found her where ſhe directed: Don Diego and ſhe diſcourſed a long time together, and diſcovered all the circumſtances of that affair, from its beginning to that time. Sirena knew Amazor, and was ſo ſurpriſed, that ſhe had like to have fainted away in her mother's arms, who was preſent at this viſit. Night drawing on, Don Diego took leave of the company, and went away with Amazor.

In his return home, he met the good prieſt with whom he had left the coach the night before, who told him how that paſſage had befallen him. Don Diego liſtened to him as attentively as if he had known nothing of it. The prieſt told him farther, that he had found the owner of the coach, and that ſearch was made for the coachman, in order to examine him upon the fact; beſides, that the maid who had been the cauſe of that ſcandal was fled.

Don Leander, in the meanwhile, was in the hands of the officers of juſtice, the ſurgeons, and phyſicians, grievouſly tormented both in body and mind. He was kept under a guard, like a criminal, having of his own accord confeſſed, that when this misfortune befel him, he had

carried his wife into the Prado, with a deſign to kill her.

All that heard this relation were eager to know the brave perſon's name who had reſcued Sirena out of ſuch imminent danger, but Don Diego did not think fit to claim the applauſe, for fear of falling into the hands of juſtice; for he being known for an admirer of Sirena, it had been eaſily believed he was in the Prado by aſſignation, and not accidentally; therefore, to avoid theſe inconveniences, and to ſhow Amazor what account he made of his advice, he reſolved to ſtay at home, and not be concerned any more in ſuch affairs. Not many days after, the news was brought him of Leander's death, who was ſaid to have died rather of the wounds he had himſelf made in his ſoul, by deſtroying his own reputation, than of thoſe he had received in the body by the unknown hand. Beſides, he was informed that Sirena, infinitely afflicted for his loſs, had left the world, becoming a religious in the ſame monaſtery where Don Diego had ſeen her, there to do penance for her own offences, and for thoſe ſhe had cauſed others to commit. Don Diego was ſo ſenſibly afflicted at this diſmal news, that he fell into a dangerous diſtemper, which had like to have carried him off after Leander.

ADVENTURE IV.

Don Diego's ſickneſs was tedious, though the pains and vexation of it were ſomewhat abated by Amazor's continual attendance. He never ſtirred from his ſide, endeavouring to divert him with pleaſant diſcourſe, intermixed with ſerious and facetious periods, and always tending to inculcate ſome wholeſome advice, ſuch as might be of uſe for our adventurer; for all Amazor's aim was to reduce him to reaſon, and break off his ill habits. His friends came frequently to ſee him, bringing the public news of the court, and any thing elſe that happened remarkable. At length he perfectly recovered, and every body concluded he had reſolved upon a new life, ſeeing him entertain company by daylight, which before was ſo odious to him; but he ſoon relapſed into his former failings. The carnival or Shrovetide coming on, debauched him again; he made freſh proteſtations of enmity againſt the day, and by ſolemn oath confirmed a perpetual alliance with the night. On Shrove Sunday night he was at a grand entertainment; but there being ſome perſons preſent who were not altogether acceptable to Don Diego, he ſlipped away to ſeek ſome more agreeable ſo-

ciety. Taking his ſword and target for his guard, he made into a by-part of the town, where there was a houſe he knew to be an academy, not of virtue but vice, where they fleeced young cullies, whilſt others ſtabbed the pureſt honour to the heart. Don Diego was expert at this exerciſe, which is a thouſand times worſe than the other, though he made no ſcruple of it, becauſe he ruined another without hazarding any thing of his own. He had not gone above half way to this place, when he found himſelf before a houſe unknown to him, the door whereof was open, and no light in it. He having a natural curioſity to pry into the actions of others, to divulge what he thought fit of them, took his ſword in his hand, without drawing it, and went into the houſe, paſſed through a long entry, at the end whereof he came into a ſpacious large place, as dark as the reſt. Here he made a full ſtop, imagining that this neglect was not without ſome deſign; and though he thought it a raſhneſs to proceed any farther, yet he reſolved to try his fortune. Groping along the walls, and finding a door upon the jar, he thruſt it open, and went in; where he found himſelf upon a trap-door, which let him down ten or twelve foot, yet ſo luckily, that he had no other hurt but the loſs of his

ſword. At the ſame time he heard a voice, which ſeemed to come from ſome diſtant place, and aſked, "Who is there?" Don Diego ſomewhat ſtunned with the fall, made no anſwer the firſt time; but as he was ſhuffling along, in hopes to find his ſword, the ſame voice cried again, "Who is there?" He fearing to be attacked by ſurpriſe, anſwered, "A ſingle man." "If it "be a man," replied the voice, "he may come "in." By this time our adventurer began to repent his running himſelf into that intricate labyrinth, where he could find no way out; but fate put him out of this confuſion, to caſt him into a greater. Being thus under a neceſſity of going on, he advanced towards the voice he had heard, and entered into a ſpacious room, where he ſaw four ſmall lamps hanging in the four angles, giving ſuch a dim light, that he had much ado to diſcern the other things that were in the place. Moving on further, he perceived a glimpſe, as it were, of two men in black, like mourners, each ſitting on a chair; one of them leaning his head on his hand, in a ſleeping poſture, and the other watching, ſeeming to attend a dead body that lay at their feet, clad in a Capuchin's habit, and ſtretched out on a ſhroud.

This diſmal ſpectacle ſomewhat ſtartled Don

Diego; but when the firſt ſurpriſe was over, he called up his courage again. In the meanwhile the ſleeper awaked, and both he and his companion began to examine our adventurer. "Are "not you," ſaid they, "the perſon they call "Don Diego?" "I am the ſame," anſwered he, "but how came you to know my name?" "Do not you inquire into that," rejoined the other, in a haughty tone, "but only anſwer "our queſtions, for thereon depend ſeveral "things we are to do this night." Don Diego hearing theſe words, knew not what courſe to take; he blamed his impertinent curioſity, but at laſt reſolving to meet all that could happen with an undaunted courage, he ſpoke up again, and ſaid to his examiners, "Well then, what is "to be done? I am Don Diego, and you are "devils." "He ſeems to know us," ſaid one of the two to the other. "You muſt ſtay there," added they, "to guard this body, whilſt we go "elſewhere to attend other affairs we have in "charge; and whatſoever you ſee or hear, be "not frighted." No ſooner had they ſpoke theſe words, without expecting his anſwer or conſent, they got up, and going out at the door, ſhut it upon him.

Being thus left alone with the dead body, he fancied this was ſome puniſhment from Heaven,

and concluded he ought to implore the Divine mercy upon this occaſion; which moved him to make the ſign of the croſs on the dead body, and to call upon the ſaints and angels to aſſiſt him; for the advice thoſe two ſpectres had given him not to be frighted brought a thouſand dreadful thoughts into his head.

The two phantoms had been gone but a very ſhort time, before he heard ſad groans, and noiſe of irons, as if they had been dragging chains along the floor of the room, which was boarded; and now and then ſuch horrid noiſes, as if the whole houſe had been ſinking. This put him into ſuch an anguiſh, that he reſolved to make his eſcape; and going to the door, in order to open it, he heard an imperfect voice, as if it came from far off, which ſaid, "Whither "do you think to fly, Don Diego; turn, turn "back, you cannot leave me yet; come back, "or I will follow you." Perceiving he could not get out, he turned back, and ſaw it was the dead man that ſpoke to him, ſaying, "Know "I am the perſon you ſo raſhly killed a few "days ago, without having ever done you any "wrong. Cruel, barbarous wretch! do you "think Heaven will not revenge me on you? "and that ſome dreadful diſaſter will not con-"ſume you for a puniſhment of your crime?

"Providence has brought you hither to liſten "to my juſt complaints; but draw nearer, that "you may hear me the better."

Theſe words ſtruck a greater terror into Don Diego than he had conceived before, as certainly concluding that was the ghoſt of Leander, which came from the other world to torment him. However, he drew near, and the dead man proceeded, "I own," ſaid he, "you killed "me fairly, and that I had my ſword in my "hand; but it was eaſy for you to overcome "me, becauſe I had not uſed myſelf to the art "of fencing from my youth, as you have done, "and therefore now you are to do me right. "Come, let us wreſtle, upon this condition, that "if you throw me, I will not only never di"ſturb you myſelf, but will never ſuffer any of "my companions to do it. But if I get the bet"ter, you ſhall be obliged to come every year, "on the anniverſary of my death, to ſpend the "whole night in the churchyard, upon the "grave where I am buried." Don Diego not believing this an equal match, anſwered, "He "did not think himſelf obliged to accept of the "challenge, there being no likelihood that hu"man weakneſs could prevail againſt a ſpiritual "power." However, conſidering this was a proper opportunity to give ſignal proof of his va-

lour, he granted the combat, and ſet himſelf in the beſt poſture he could to oppoſe his adverſary. The dead man got up in his capuchin habit, and ſeemed taller than the uſual ſize of man, and at the ſame time the four lamps dropped down, and went out.

Don Diego felt a cold ſweat all over his body, with a mighty trembling, and was ſo aſtoniſhed, that he ſtood as if he had been quite ſenſeleſs. As ſoon as the lamps dropped down, the dead man fell ſo furiouſly upon our adventurer, that he threw him full three paces from him, as if he had no life left in him, for he lay in a ſwoon above an hour, what with the fright and what with the fall. When he came to himſelf, he knew not whether he was in this world or in the other. At length, being ſomewhat better recovered, he ſate up, and perceived it was day. Looking about him, he ſaw nothing but the four walls, and getting upon his feet, endeavoured to find ſome footſteps of the former apparitions, but found no remains, nor ſo much as the four lamps he had ſeen fall down. The light increaſing, and his courage with it, he had a mind to ſearch the houſe; which he did from top to bottom, yet ſaw nothing but what he brought in with him, which was his ſword that had failed him in time of need. He went out of that

haunted houſe to retire to his own, before the day came farther on, and would willingly have inquired in the neighbourhood whoſe houſe that was, and how it came not to be inhabited, but it was ſo early that he met nobody to aſk of.

" Doubtleſs," ſaid he, " this houſe is haunted, and nobody dares live in it. I wonder " that in Madrid, where the king uſually reſides, " ſome care ſhould not be taken to remedy this " evil, which may be of dangerous conſequence " to the public; but who can I tell this ſtrange " adventure to, that will not laugh at it, and " conclude it is the notion of a diſtempered " brain? I muſt never ſpeak of it, for I ſhall " never be believed. Yet it is a great trouble " to me to bury ſo wonderful an adventure in " perpetual ſilence."

Thus was he talking to himſelf, when he came to his houſe, and went in without knocking, as he was wont to do, having a maſter-key, and retired to bed, to reſt him after his late fatigue. About four in the afternoon, Amazor came into his chamber, and awaked him. " Good " God," ſaid Don Diego to him, fetching a deep ſigh, " you have brought me out of ſtrange con- " fuſion." " How ſo, Sir," ſaid Amazor? " I " was troubled in mind," replied he, " with a " diſmal dream, proceeding from a dreadful ac-

" cident that befel me laſt night." Having given Amazor this occaſion to inquire after it, he told him particularly all that had happened to him. Amazor, who was always contemplative, told him, theſe were merciful warnings from heaven to make him know himſelf; that he ought to take care how he ſlighted them, leſt this loving admonition ſhould be changed into an exemplary puniſhment, and God, who now treated him like an indulgent Father, ſhould become a ſevere judge, to chaſtiſe the offences he daily committed; that the blood of the gentleman he had ſo lately killed, and whoſe honour he would have taken away, making him infamous in the eyes of the world, had cried to God for vengeance; that it was time to reform and forſake his follies; that he ought to open his eyes, and ſeek the light of reaſon by that of the day, if he would not for ever be reckoned as blind in his ſoul as he was in his body, ſince he was ſuch an enemy to the light; that he ought to improve the talent God had given him; that he wronged both himſelf and the public, being of birth and capacity to bear any honourable employments, which might be advantageous to both; that he had given ſufficient proofs of his valour, and for the future he ought to en-

deavour to give as good teſtimony of his prudence as he had done of his courage.

Amazor having delivered himſelf to this effect, remained very well pleaſed that he had been admitted to ſo long an audience; he fancied he had already overcome Don Diego, and regained the authority he once had over him. "My dear maſter," ſaid he, "whom I may better call my ſecond father, being no leſs obliged "to you than to him that begot me; I own it "is high time to lay aſide my extravagancies, "and leave the ſcandalous life I have hitherto "led, that I may follow the paths of virtue. I "am reſolved to overcome all my evil inclinations, and from henceforward to put in practice all the good advice you ſhall give me; "pardon the inſolencies I have committed, which "your prudence has tolerated, and your affection excuſed. It is true, I was laſt night in "great danger, and conſidering how I ran myſelf into it, there is juſt cauſe to ſay that heaven has ſpared me, and that worſe might have "befallen me. O Divine mercy! how deeply "am I indebted to you, and what praiſes ought "not I to give you, for having delivered me "from ſuch wonderful danger, which I never "thought to eſcape." Theſe moving expreſ-

ſions were attended with tears, which made Amazor believe that Don Diego was truly penitent for his paſt offences, and hoped that he would mend for the future.

Thus were they diſcourſing together, when they heard a knocking at the door. Don Diego would not have it opened, that nobody anſwering, whoſoever it was might go away; by that means to avoid all temptations of breaking the good reſolution he had newly made; for night then drawing on, he believed it was ſome of his acquaintance that came to debauch him. The more Don Diego kept back from ſuffering the door to be opened, the harder he without knocked, and not ſatisfied with the noiſe the hammer made, took up a great ſtone to be heard the better. At length Don Diego, weary of that diſturbance, ſent one to open the door, and in came a raking old companion of his, with a counterfeit ſmile, the better to diſguiſe his reſentment for having been kept out ſo long. They ſaluted one another in a more courteous manner than uſual, the ſerious humour Don Diego was in obliging the other to uſe more ceremony than at other times.

Don Antonio, for that was the man's name, aſked him how he had ſpent the Carnival, what company he had been in, and how he intended

to divert himſelf the remaining days before Lent. Amazor was preſent, and abhorred theſe queſtions, fearing leſt he ſhould again put Don Diego into the road he had ſo newly diverted him from. "For my part," continued Don Antonio, more attentive to turn up his whiſkers, than regardful of what he ſaid, "I narrowly "miſſed laſt night catching one that you know "in a ſnare I had laid for him; but I ſhall have "him ſooner or later, and will make my advan-"tage of this diſappointment." Who is that? ſaid Don Diego. "It is a gentleman of Cor-"dova," replies the other, "whom we call Don "Diego the knight, both becauſe he reckons "himſelf of that degree, and to diſtinguiſh be-"twixt him and ſeveral other friends of ours, "who bear the name of Don Diego, as you do, "and therefore we call him the Knight. This "ſpark giving too much way to his vanity, has "declared himſelf a pretender to a young lady, "who is very rich and beautiful, and daughter "to a counſellor in the Court of Chancery, who, "by reaſon he is an excellent orator, and in "great vogue, has got the name of the Golden "Mouth and Purſe. And though he has never "yet diſcovered his love to this lady, he follows "her whereſoever ſhe goes, pretends to be jea-"lous and paſſionate, and boaſts in all compa-

" nies, that he has grounds for what he does;
" that he has encouragement to proceed, and
" hopes for a happy event; for ſelf-conceit is
" the common failing of fools.

" You muſt underſtand that this lady's win-
" dows look into a churchyard, which has given
" many occaſion to ſay, that ſhe lives there on
" purpoſe to bury all thoſe in one tomb, whom
" the darts of her eyes ſhall kill. This knight
" has a rival, much more fortunate in eſtate and
" parts than he, and better looked upon by the
" beauty we ſpeak of. This gentleman, to put
" a ſtop to the other's continual haunting about
" his miſtreſs's houſe, and be more at liberty to
" to ſee her at nights, as is allowed him, con-
" trived to put him into ſome fright, being in-
" formed that he was ſomewhat cowardly, and
" that being engaged in a quarrel, he had made
" more uſe of his heels than his hands.

" To this purpoſe he told him one day in my
" hearing, that there was a man lately buried
" in that churchyard, who having been a very
" ill liver, walked there duly about three o'clock
" in the morning, dragging chains, and fetching
" ſuch dreadful groans, that all who heard him
" died for fear; and that moſt of the lodgers
" and inhabitants of the neighbouring houſes,

" removed from thence as fast as they could, be-
" ing no longer able to live in such dread; that
" he had thought fit to let him know so much,
" because, though his rival, he was willing to
" show how much he was his humble servant at
" the same time, and should be sorry any mis-
" fortune might befal him for want of being for-
" warned; in short, that he advised him to re-
" tire home every night in good time, as he
" would do himself, promising to take the ad-
" vice he gave him, and for the future to live
" more chastely and modestly than he had done
" for the time past.

" At the same time I used all the rhetoric I
" could to fix these notions in his head; but the
" spark, who was no such fool as we took him
" for, made a jest of all we said, and of his ri-
" val's contrivance; and thereupon fell a-telling
" us stories of his imaginary, not real achieve-
" ments, to let us understand that he feared no-
" thing, and that no ghosts were able to fright
" him. We left him in that good humour, and
" went away looking upon one another much
" out of countenance, because our project suc-
" ceeded no better. The earnest desire I had to
" make trial of his courage, and to put some af-
" front upon that worthy knight, made me re-

" ſolve to ſpend the Carnival in finding out ſome " ridiculous invention to catch and make a jeſt " of him.

" The trick I had a mind to play him was " eaſily contrived, but it was requiſite to find " ingenious perſons to put it in execution, for " fear leſt the ill management of it ſhould turn " to our ſhame. I have a houſe in the Apple " Street, which is a by-part of the town, in " which there are ſeveral apartments, and fit to " lodge three or four ſmall families. About " eight days ago the people that lived in it run " away by night, and left it upon my hands, " cheating me of a quarter's rent that was due ; " and though ſeveral have offered to take the " houſe and pay the rent beforehand, becauſe it " is very convenient, yet I have ſtill delayed " concluding a bargain with them, becauſe it " was to be the theatre I provided for acting the " comedy I was contriving for Don Diego, the " knight, which was to be played this laſt night. " I will tell you my invention.

" About one in the morning I carried into " that houſe, three young men newly come from " the univerſity, lads of ready wit and good ma- " nagement. I told them, that a friend of mine " and I had a mind, with their help, to make " trial of the courage of a ſpark, who boaſted

" that he feared no ſpirits. Having thus ac-
" quainted them with my deſign, I furniſhed
" them with the clothes they were to put on,
" and led them into the great room where the
" farce was to be acted, which was deep in the
" houſe. One of theſe three young men was
" taller than I by the head; by that you may
" gueſs what a ſtrapping fellow he was, for I am
" none of the leaſt; he was every way propor-
" tionable and well made, and as ſtrong as Samp-
" ſon. This man was to have a Capuchin's ha-
" bit on, and to lie along on a black cloth, re-
" preſenting a dead man. The other two were
" clad in black, like mourners, their faces co-
" vered, except their eyes; and theſe two watch-
" ed the dead man, ſitting on two chairs. At
" the four corners of the room hung four little
" lamps, which gave a light more dreadful than
" darkneſs itſelf.

" Having ordered all things as I have de-
" ſcribed, I told him that was to act the dead
" man, and his companions, that I was going to
" ſend them the perſon I had ſpoken of, and
" that as ſoon as they heard him, they ſhould
" aſk whether his name was not Don Diego,
" and if he anſwered, yes, the two mourners
" ſhould go out, and ſhut him up alone with the
" dead man, who ſhould pretend to be a perſon

" the knight had killed foully; that he ſhould
" demand ſatisfaction for that wrong, and wreſtle
" with him. In fine, I told them, if they thought
" fit to add any thing to the contrivance, they
" might do it freely, being well ſatisfied they
" would perform it very dexterouſly; but that
" whatever came of it they muſt be ſure to ſtun,
" or amaze him ſo, that the dead man and his
" companions might get away and leave him
" there. Ill fate ſo ordered it, that all this pre-
" paration came to nothing; for as I was going
" to ſeek out Don Diego to touch him in point
" of courage, and dare him to go to my houſe,
" which I was to tell him was forſaken, becauſe
" of its being haunted, I was taken up by four
" officers, who carried me before a judge, to de-
" poſe what I knew of a crime a friend of mine
" was in trouble about. I uſed all the argu-
" ments I could to bring myſelf off, alleging I
" could give no evidence in that affair, as being
" wholly a ſtranger to it. The judge poſitively
" perſiſting in the contrary, and juſtly provoked,
" ordered me to be ſecured, and that I ſhould
" not be allowed to ſpeak to any body, for fear
" of ſending advice to the party accuſed; but a
" certain great man, my benefactor, hearing of
" my misfortune, has juſt got me releaſed. You
" are the firſt perſon I have ſeen ſince I came

" out of priſon, and I am now going to find " thoſe young men, who were to act the farce " contrived againſt my knight, to know how " long they waited. No doubt but they will be " angry with me, for having made them ſpend " the night in that mummery, and will believe " the trick was deſigned to be put upon them, " and not upon another."

As Don Antonio went on with his ſtory, Don Diego diſcovered the original of his unlucky adventure, befallen him no leſs through his own curioſity, than the miſtake of the name of Don Diego, and admiring the oddneſs of the accident, told Don Antonio all that had happened to him, with as much plainneſs and jollity, as if he had been no way concerned. Don Antonio bleſſed himſelf, and was amazed, as not believing that what he ſaid was true; till Don Diego ſwearing to it, and calling Amazor to teſtify what he had ſaid to him before, he ſtood mute for awhile, being much concerned that it had lighted upon a perſon he honoured as one of his moſt particular friends. Don Diego told him, he did not take it ill in the leaſt, and was ſenſible that the plot was not laid for him. Don Antonio, the better to ſatisfy himſelf of Don Diego's ſincerity, invited him to ſup at his houſe, which he readily granted; and being come thi-

ther, they were informed that the perſon who acted the dead man was fled to an ambaſſador's houſe, believing the man he had wreſtled with was dead with the fright. They preſently ſent to acquaint him that he might ſafely come away, and if he had a mind to laugh heartily, he ſhould ſup with them, where he would hear a pleaſant ſtory. He came along with the meſſenger, and they ſpent the reſt of the night in diſcourſing of that ſtrange accident. Don Diego went home in good time, to the great ſatisfaction of Amazor, believing it to be the effect of his good advice, and of the reſolution Don Diego had made, to alter his courſe of life for the time to come.

ADVENTURE V.

The public rejoicings of the Carnival being over, Lent ſucceeded it with a meagre countenance, hateful to thoſe who love good eating and drinking. Don Diego thought it not ſo diſagreeable; the mortifications he endured, whilſt others feaſted and made merry, and the reſolutions he lately made of reforming his life, had diſpoſed him to give Aſh Wedneſday a fa-

vourable reception. Amazor, who never ſtirred from him, uſed all his art and experience to moderate the violent ſallies of his youth, and to baniſh his houſe all thoſe he thought might rob him of the fruits of his labour. In ſhort there appeared ſo great a change in Don Diego's behaviour within a few days, that his beſt friends had cauſe to bleſs heaven for working ſuch a miracle. During the whole Lent he employed himſelf in acts of piety, ſometimes he went to ſermons, ſometimes to hoſpitals, and ſometimes to priſons, where he gave plentiful alms. He viſited poor families, which were in great diſtreſs, and aſhamed to diſcover their wants. In ſhort, ſuch was his courſe of life, that all men in him admired the virtues of a pious Chriſtian, and of a worthy gentleman.

But perſeverance in good actions being a virtue rarely practiſed among courtiers; when Eaſter came, and the ſpring began to draw company together, he was again viſited by his familiar acquaintance, to the great grief of Amazor, who perceived they, by degrees, would inveigle away the bird he had ſo long kept tame. One day, they carried him a-walking, another, they invited him to a collation, and now and then to ſupper, yet ſo that he ſtill came home at ſeaſonable hours, and made uſe of day and

night like other folks; but at length, by much keeping company with his aſſociates, and continually rambling about, he fell back inſenſibly into his former courſe. His walks continually gained more and more upon the night, and at laſt exceeded the bounds of decency.

Having imperiouſly ſilenced Amazor, who endeavoured to ſtem the courſe of his perverſe inclinations, he caſt off all manner of deference to him, and returned more eagerly to his former practices. He took his uſual guard of ſword and target, and about ten at night went away to the Prado the place where thoſe cheats in love, the ladies and courtezans of Madrid have ſettled their academy, or rather their exchange. Were there ever a philoſopher in this age that underſtood the murmuring of waters, as once there was one who underſtood the chirping of birds, he might, by liſtening to the purling of the fountains in that plain, learn abundance of ſecret ſtories, and find matter enough to compoſe many volumes of curious romances.

Don Diego, having walked about two hundred paces, to ſee a coach paſs by, which moved on as gently as if an empreſs had been in it, he drew near to it; and ſpied a young man ſinging next the door of it, with ſuch a voice, as ſeemed very diſagreeable. And to mend the mat-

ter, he at the ſame time played very ſcurvily on a guittar that was out of tune. This coach ſtopped right againſt a ring of gentlemen and ladies, who were ſitting by one of the fountains where this ſavage Orpheus, fitter to carry ſouls to hell than to bring them thence, very impudently ſet himſelf a-ſinging; but as ſoon as ever he began, he was requited with ſo many ſcoffs and hiſſes, that he was ſoon obliged to give over, and withdraw. This wretched ſinger was page to an unfortunate lord, to whom the coach belonged.

The company that had ſo ſhamefully put to flight that enemy to the ſenſe of hearing, were ſtill rallying on that ridiculous ſubject, when on a ſudden they were diverted by the ſweet ſound of an angelical voice, which ſeemed to proceed from the mouth of a woman, and made amends for the diſagreeableneſs of the page. They all got up to draw near the coach ſhe was in, and heard theſe following words:

SONG.

I.

'Tis not alone the force of love,
That makes my paleneſs and my grief;
Fierce jealouſy without relief,
Does to my reſt more fatal prove.

II.

But I myſelf alone may blame,
Who durſt preſume to aim ſo high,
My thoughts above my ſphere did fly,
And ſet me in this quenchleſs flame.

III.

Then how ſhall I be ever bleſt,
Who cannot even comprehend
The great perfections that attend
The cauſe that robs me of my reſt.

IV.

Though your diſdain does pierce my ſoul,
Such charms appear in your bright eyes,
As do my fainting ſenſe ſurpriſe,
And all the pain I feel controul.

V.

I'm bound in ſuch a happy chain,
And burn in ſuch a pleaſing fire,
That all I dread, or can deſire,
Is or to loſe or keep my pain.

This harmonious voice charmed all that heard it; and even thoſe, whoſe harſh temper made them before inſenſible of the ſweetneſs of this art, were enamoured with it. The coach was immediately beſet by ſeveral perſons, and among the reſt, a certain gallant drawing near, was ſo bold as to lean upon the coach door, where this

Urania was. By his behaviour he ſeemed to have ſome peculiar privilege ſo to do, for neither the young lady nor her mother, who ſat by her, were at all diſturbed at that familiarity. Perhaps the mother, who before had grumbled, as moſt old women do, might have been greaſed, as well as her coach wheels, that ſhe might make the leſs noiſe.

There were abundance of other young fellows, who would willingly have been no leſs familiar, if their modeſty had not ſtood in the way. Whilſt they were walking to and fro about the coach, another gentleman not ſo nice came up all in a heat, who being in love with the young lady, had followed her from her houſe to the Prado. Drawing near, he perceived ſhe was talking with the other gentleman, who ſeemed to take a pride in it before the company that ſtood round, which diſturbed the new comer, who looking about him ſpied Don Diego Love-Night, who was his friend. Having ſaluted him, he took him aſide, and told him how envious and jealous he was of that man; that he did not like his behaviour, and had a mind to pick a quarrel with him. Don Diego, who was much better at giving advice to another, than at taking it himſelf, allayed the

fierce commotion of his hot temper; and the other yielding to his reaſons, contained himſelf for ſome time.

At length our adventurer ſaw three gentlemen paſs by very leiſurely, and as it were quarrelling among themſelves, one of which, by his voice, he took for a friend of his; and deſiring to be ſatisfied whether it was ſo or no, that he might endeavour to ſerve him if he had occaſion, he gave his guittar to the other that had accoſted him before, to hold, and went after him. The other, who was wholly intent upon his rival's behaviour, did not regard what Don Diego did, but let him go without offering to bear him company.

But now the lady who had charmed all that heard her with the ſweetneſs of her voice, was entreated by all there preſent to ſing an air or two more; and ſhe, to ſhow her breeding, took up her guittar, which, as ill luck would have it, had two ſtrings broken. Don Diego's friend having the guittar in his hand well tuned, drew near to the coach, and offered it to the lady; at the ſame time, he that leaned on the coach door, without any regard to the other, ſtood upright, and ſcornfully thruſt away the arm and the guittar. Our adventurer's friend, who only wanted ſuch an opportunity, and was like fuel

prepared to take the fire of paſſion, thought this an inſolent action, and to revenge it, made uſe of the arm and the inſtrument that had been affronted, laying on twice furiouſly about the favourite's ears, who was bareheaded, and broke the guittar in pieces, which returned a ſound leſs agreeable than when Don Diego handled it. At the ſame time he drew his ſword, as did all the reſt that were preſent, and among them ſeveral officers of juſtice, who are frequently at thoſe hours in the Prado, becauſe of the frequent quarrels that happen there, in which many brave men are loſt. The aggreſſor finding himſelf alone among ſo many ſtrangers, wiſely took the advantage of the darkneſs, and winding himſelf into the midſt of the throng, for fear of being known, ſlipped away without ſpeaking a word.

The coach, which had been the occaſion of all this diſturbance, made off ſo ſwiftly by the help of ſix horſes it was drawn by, that when the officers would have ſeized it to pay the coſt of their diſappointment, they could not find what was become of it. Every one made off a ſeveral way, when Don Diego returned from running after thoſe three gentlemen, believing one of them had been his friend. He was much ſurpriſed at this ſudden commotion, not

knowing who had been the cauſe of it. Seeking all about for the perſon he had intruſted with his inſtrument, and not finding him, he began to fear it had not met ſuch uſage as it deſerved, for it was one of the rareſt pieces of the age. Whilſt he was lamenting its abſence, the guittar was all in ſhivers in the hands of a ſupreme judge in criminal affairs, who was examining that matter, queſtioning the man that had been hurt, who could not ſay who ſtruck him, becauſe he knew him not. The darkneſs cauſed the confuſion the officers were in, laying hold of the next that were in their way, without diſtinguiſhing betwixt the innocent and the guilty.

The ſurgeons being ordered to ſearch the wounded man, reported that the wound was very dangerous. They always make the worſt of things to gain the greater reputation and to enhance their pay. Don Diego waited two days without hearing any news of his dear inſtrument, and perceiving no likelihood of its being reſtored, went to look for the perſon he had intruſted with it, and was told he had abſented himſelf, and they knew not when he would come again. He could not unriddle this myſtery, as being ignorant of the cauſe of his departure.

The loſs of his guittar made him let ſlip ſome

nights without taking his rambles, which induced Amazor ſtill to live in hopes; for he obſerved all his actions, endeavouring to diſcover ſome ſigns of amendment, but ſtill could make no ſound judgment by them. If he happened to live three days within compaſs, he ſpent three weeks in his uſual extravagancies.

The wounded gentleman grew worſe and worſe, which threw him into a fever, ſo that the ſurgeons and phyſicians did not like him. The judge, though he uſed all his endeavours to diſcover the offender, could make nothing of it, which troubled him very much, becauſe the perſon hurt belonged to a miniſter of ſtate, whom he was deſirous to oblige.

Every one ſtriving to do ſomething towards finding the criminal, among the reſt one of the clerks of the court, as ſharp as an old monkey, often viewed the remains of the guittar committed to his cuſtody, hoping to find the owner's name upon it, becauſe abundance of young men uſed to be guilty of that folly. However, he took ſo much pains in putting together the pieces, that he at length found the name of the workman that made it; and, as if he had found out the philoſopher's ſtone, haſted away to that inſtrument maker's houſe, who being ſhowed the ruins of the guittar, ſoon knew it, and ſaid

it belonged to Don Diego, which was confirmed by his journeyman and apprentice. The clerk not ſatisfied with this verbal declaration, ſent them all three in cuſtody to the judge, where they confirmed what they had before depoſed under hand and oath. This done, the judge forbid them, under ſevere penalties, acquainting Don Diego with what had happened; and thought he had now ſufficient evidence for ſecuring of the offenders, and putting them to the rack in caſe the wounded man miſcarried. Search was immediately made for Don Diego, in order to ſecure him the next night, but the cunning inſtrument maker, who had made the guittar, and given his depoſition againſt our adventurer, not regarding his proteſtations before the judge, found him out, and acquainted him what was in agitation againſt his perſon, and with the wretched condition of the guittar. He told him all the particulars concerning his unfortunate inſtrument, and how it had been beaten to pieces about a gentleman's ears in the Prado; ſo that by this account and his friend's abſence, he might eaſily gueſs at the reſt. He was extremely concerned that his guittar had ſuffered ſhipwreck againſt the rock of the wounded perſon's head, but was more troubled at his friend's

abſence, concluding that if the patient died, he muſt loſe him for ever.

Then bringing the caſe home to himſelf, and conſidering the advice he had juſt received, he curſed the clerk that had been the cauſe of his trouble. How durſt you, falſe treacherous wretch, ſaid he, as if the man had been by him, practiſe againſt my reputation? Have you the impudence to attack my honour, and to contrive to oblige me to appear and give an account of my actions before a judge? Muſt I be this day liable to the cenſures of ſuch a petti-fogging knave as you, who give crimes what turn you will, and magnify them according to your fancy or malice? Doubtleſs, this is a matter of ſuch moment, I muſt adviſe with ſome perſon of diſcretion and experience, who may put me in the way how to ſhun the ſcandal I may otherwiſe undergo; but to whom can I better have recourſe than to my faithful Amazor?

Thus was he talking to himſelf when Amazor entered the room, to whom he communicated the perplexity he was in. Amazor, without farther delay, called ſeveral porters, and in a moment removed the moſt valuable goods into an ambaſſador's houſe, who lived cloſe by.

The ambaſſador's ſecretary, who was Amazor's intimate friend, took care of thoſe goods, and provided a chamber for our adventurer. Thus did he ſecure himſelf againſt the firſt ſtrokes of juſtice; for though he was innocent, he would have ſuffered much for the abſent offender, being unwilling to accuſe him, though it were to clear himſelf of all the foul circumſtances that appeared againſt him.

Having thus diſpoſed his affairs, Don Diego went with Amazor to the ambaſſador's houſe, where he was courteouſly received by the ſecretary; and having acquainted his maſter with the whole affair, prevailed with him to uſe his intereſt for him. Soon after the ſurgeons perceived that the wounded gentleman began to mend apace, notice whereof was preſently given to the abſent gentleman, who had been the author of all this miſchief, and of the trouble he had brought his friend into. At length the patient being pretty well recovered, the other came privately to Madrid, where ſeveral perſons of the greateſt quality interpoſing, an accommodation was propoſed, and the conditions were not long debating. The charming lady, whoſe ſinging had been the cauſe of all this diſaſter, had a hand in theſe propoſals, and reconciled all differences, engaging her word to our adventurer's

friend, that ſhe would by degrees break off the familiarity his rival had contracted with her. Thus the party offended ſuffered the penalty, becauſe he was not ſo powerful as the other, had the lady been as good as her word.

Don Diego ſeeing his friend had now full ſatisfaction, thought of revenging himſelf on the clerk who had contrived to bring him into trouble. Our adventurer was very revengeful, and never undertook any but he endeavoured to make it as public as he could, that it might be the greater. To this purpoſe he made himſelf acquainted, by the help of ſeveral treats, with ſome bullies that reſorted to the ambaſſador's houſe, whence he would not remove until he had been even with the clerk. When he thought it fit time to put his deſign in execution, he ſummoned all his inſtruments, being ſeven in number, and provided them a ſupper, in which he ſpared for no coſt; and they all drank plentifully, remembering all their friends, ſome particulars whereof being remarkable, we will here ſet down.

The firſt health was to the ambaſſador's ſteward, who gave them ſanctuary in that houſe againſt all the ſerjeants and other officers of juſtice. The ſecond to the generous Don Diego, who treated them ſo often, wiſhing him increaſe

of health to defray thoſe worthy expences. The third to ſolicitors and counſellors, becauſe amidſt all that have to do in criminal cauſes, they alone defend the criminals, provided they are able to pay for the lies and ſtories they invent to deſtroy truth, and make falſehood take place. The fourth to phyſicians, as being of their own profeſſion, becauſe their buſineſs is killing, though they do it with leſs danger to themſelves, as venturing nothing, and never failing to murder a man when they have a mind to it. The fifth to the brokers, who ſo cunningly diſguiſe the hats and cloaks they ſteal at night. The ſixth to vintners and innkeepers, who treat and entertain them on the road, and aſſiſt them in all their frauds. In ſhort, they drank more ſorts of healths than can be here inſerted; and to conclude with Don Diego's project, it was reſolved that they would the next night torment the wretched clerk; and thus they performed it.

Four of the reſoluteſt of the gang dreſſed themſelves up as we repreſent devils, in the moſt frightful manner they could, and about midnight came to the houſe of the poor condemned criminal, which was in a lane. They got into the houſe, the door being open, by reaſon that ſeveral families lived in it; and a great

dog hearing them, fell a barking, and waked the clerk, who made his man riſe to ſee what was the occaſion of the diſturbance. The man coming out, met thoſe four frightful figures on the ſtairs, each of them holding a lighted link in his hand, which filled the place with a thick ſtinking ſmoke. The lad was in ſuch a fright, that without being able to return to his maſter, he dropped down in a ſwoon. The devils preſently ruſhed in at the door he had left open, and went directly to the clerk's bed, where he lay with his wife, who being both juſt waked out of their firſt ſleep, believed them to be really what they repreſented, which put them into ſuch a fright, that they lay ſenſeleſs as if they had been dead. Then the devils, without loſing any time, took hold of the damned clerk, every one taking an arm or a leg, and ſenſeleſs as he was, laid him down upon the floor; where they brought him to himſelf by virtue of a good whipping with knotted ropes, laid on ſo thick and ſharply, that before he could ſpeak a word he was half fleaed. The firſt word he uttered was the name of Jeſus, at which the devils left him and fled, making a moſt hideous noiſe at the doors, to confirm the opinion he had conceived of them; ſo that when the ſtorm was over, he abſolutely concluded they were devils,

ſince they vaniſhed at his calling upon that holy name. He lay ſtretched out on the ground half dead, what with the cruel flogging, and what with the fright. His poor wife lay quaking, all bathed in a cold ſweat, and had ſhrunk down into the bed, not daring to put out her head; ſo that the wretched fellow lay all night as the devils left him. When day appeared, and diſſipated all terrors, the body was found in the midſt of the floor in a high fever, and his wife in the ſame condition. They were long in the hands of the ableſt phyſicians, and very narrowly eſcaped death.

The news of this accident was ſoon ſpread all over the town, and even from the mouths of ſome who had the ſtory from the clerk himſelf. Every one talked of it according to his own fancy, and ſome ſaid, he was certainly guilty of ſome heinous crimes, unknown to men, ſince heaven had puniſhed him by the hands of helliſh executioners. Don Diego hearing this diſcourſed about the town, after the account he had received from thoſe that did the execution, thought himſelf ſufficiently revenged. Our adventurer only pitied the poor wife; but a good huſband and wife are ſo cloſely allied and linked together, that there is no doing the one a kindneſs without the participation of the other. After

this noble exploit, Don Diego kept at home for ſome time, living in a very decent manner; but this humour laſted not long; for before many days were paſt, he fell again to his night rambles.

ADVENTURE VI.

The ſun had now run his courſe, and day ſhut in, when our noble Don Diego, whom experience made never the wiſer, reſolved to ſeek new dangers, or rather to meet them, for they too often preſented themſelves to him; but before we enter too far upon this adventure, it will be requiſite to make a ſhort digreſſion.

There was at this time at Seville, a man of a genteel preſence enough, who kept himſelf in decent apparel, and paſſed for a gentleman; but might be properly enough compared to an eagle, for by day he looked the ſun in the face, and by night he followed his prey, ſtealing whatſoever came in his way. At the beginning of his reign he took the name of Don Diego, until time having diſcovered what profeſſion he followed, he had the ſurname given him of Love-Night; ſo that there were two men of the

ſame name at once; for, as has been ſaid, our adventurer was ſometimes called Fly-Light, and ſometimes Love-Night, theſe two additional names ſignifying almoſt the ſame thing, though proceeding from different cauſes, ſome more ſcandalous than the other.

It ſeemed to be fatal to our Don Diego, to be brought into trouble by the miſtaking of names; but that which he met with among the pretended ſprites was no more than a flea-bite in compariſon of what he endured in this new adventure; for as much as among perſons of a generous diſpoſition, their honour is much dearer than their life. This Don Diego at Seville, perceiving that his practices were diſcovered, and that there was a talk of calling him to an account, gave out that he was going away to Madrid, the Theatre of Wonders, and the loadſtone that attracts both the good and the bad; but the day he left Seville, inſtead of making towards the Court of Spain, he went away to Granada, hoping he might play his cards there, and live a conſiderable time before he was diſcovered, that city being very kind to ſtrangers.

The news of his journey to Madrid being ſpread abroad among all that knew him, the ſon of a jeweller of Seville had notice of it, who being deceived by common fame, a wonder that

a tradeſman ſhould be impoſed upon, reſolved to follow him immediately, and with all poſſible ſpeed, to the great detriment of his buttocks, which were miſerably galled; and of his ſtomach, that often returned more than it had received, being grievouſly ſhaken by the hired mules that are on that road. The cauſe of his enduring all theſe hardſhips was, that this ſharping Don Diego had taken away ſome jewels and diamond rings of his, of value, which he had truſted him with. As ſoon as he came to Madrid, he delivered printed bills in all the goldſmiths ſhops, deſcribing thoſe jewels, and in the meanwhile inſinuated himſelf into all companies, in hopes to meet with his man.

The ſecond night after this jeweller came to Madrid, our primitive and legitimate Don Diego Love-Night, taking no warning by his paſt misfortunes, ſet out again, expoſing himſelf in defiance of fortune. The occaſion of this ſally was to divert himſelf with a young beautiful townſwoman, wife to a ſolicitor, who was reckoned a ſharp witty woman, and very good dancer, ready to receive any thing that was offered her, and conſequently eaſy to be bribed. In order to gain admittance to her, Don Diego made uſe of a ſly old woman, well verſed in carrying on amorous intrigues, and who, under co-

lour of promoting chaſtity, only contrived to deſtroy it. The bargain was ſtruck up, and Don Diego had leave to go viſit the ſolicitor's wife that night betwixt twelve and one, upon condition that he ſhould give her two diamond rings ſhe had ſeen on his fingers, and which he had a great value for, becauſe they had been his mother's; but what is there that luſt will not ſacrifice when its inſolence is not checked? Beſides, he was to lay aſide the habit of a gentleman, and diſguiſe himſelf like a ſervant, to the end, that if her huſband ſhould happen to meet him going in or coming out, ſhe might tell him it was a man her mother had ſent to inquire after her health. For the better carrying on this plot, the ſolicitor's wife ſent him by the old woman, a letter ſhe had received that very day from her mother, which ſhe had ſealed up again, and wrapt in another paper, that it might ſerve a ſecond time, as occaſion might offer: Furthermore, that he ſhould come in the back way, going along under an old mud wall, and open the garden door with a maſter-key ſhe ſent with the letter: Thence he was to go into a parlour, where he ſhould find his miſtreſs ready to receive him.

Don Diego ſubmitted to all theſe conditions, left his houſe about the appointed hour, dreſſed

as was ordered him, with the rings, the letter, and the maſter-key. Being come into the ſtreet where the ſolicitor's wife lived, he heard a noiſe in a houſe, as if people were in a paſſion, which his curious temper obliged him to inquire into. He went in, and preſently ſpied a man in a court writing upon the end of a caſk, and another lighting him with a candle in a lanthorn for fear the wind ſhould blow it out. About theſe two ſtood many more, ſome half-dreſſed and ſome half-naked; ſome without ſtockings and ſlipſhod; others in their ſhirts, with only their cloaks wrapped about them, muffling up their noſes, and moſt of them with their ſwords under their arms. Our adventurer ſtood ſtill behind them, liſtening to their diſcourſe, without being diſcovered by them, and by that means underſtood that there had been a robbery juſt then committed in the houſe; that he who writ was a notary, and the other that lighted, a ſerjeant, who were taking the depoſitions of the neighbours, ſome of whom had ſuffered their ſhare in the robbery.

Don Diego having thus ſatisfied his curioſity was for making off fair and ſoftly, to go on with his intrigue; but, as ill fortune would have it the damp of the night had given him a cold in his head, which made him ſneeze three times

and ſo alarm all thoſe people, who cried out, "Who is there?" Don Diego unwilling to be known, doubled his pace, without ſpeaking a word, which raiſed a jealouſy in the others, and made them purſue him as they did, crying out, "Stop thief." He finding himſelf purſued, and ſo foully affronted, faced about, drawing his ſword, replied, "You lie, ye ſcoundrels;" then letting them come on, gave the boldeſt of them a great cut over the head; but whatever he could do to get out of their hands, they ſecured and carried him before the notary, who had ſtaid in the houſe.

There was nothing about him but what ſeemed to teſtify he had been concerned in the robbery committed there; his mien and his habit did not agree; it was eaſy to gueſs he was diſguiſed. Being ſearched, they found in his pocket a little caſket, in which the rings were, as alſo the maſter-key, all dangerous circumſtances againſt him. The notary divided the booty very equally, taking the rings for himſelf, and giving the key to the ſerjeants for their good ſervice; which done, they led him away to gaol.

Finding himſelf ſo roughly handled, he began to declare he was a gentleman; that they were miſtaken in him, deſiring to be carried before the Lord Mayor, whom he would acquaint with

his name, and make known his innocency before him. But whatsoever he could say, they made no account of it; he was put into a dungeon in the prison, as a night-robber, a shop-lifter, and a breaker of the peace. He was immediately confronted with two real thieves that had committed the crime; they hearing him say that he was a gentleman, and had a sufficient estate to live according to his quality, without robbing another, resolved to own him for one of their gang, not doubting but that if he was of that rank he pretended, their cause would be long depending, and, in the meanwhile their friends making restitution, would procure their liberty; besides that, they might happen to get off by his interest, and, if it came to the worst, they would be condemned to some easy punishment. Don Diego perceiving that these men deposed quite contrary to what he expected, having thought himself sure that they would clear him, and that consequently he should be set at liberty, and discharged of all that was alleged against him, began to rave, and behave himself like a madman. Let us leave him a while in that frenzy to make him the soberer.

As soon as it was day, the news of his imprisonment flew all about the town; his friends were acquainted with it, who came immediate-

ly, offering to be bound body for body for him, affirming he had no hand in the crime laid to his charge; but they were not allowed so much as to see him, and went their ways astonished, and out of countenance, to hear it affirmed, that a man of his quality should be taken in a robbery, disguised, and with a picklock in his pocket.

This rumour being handed about, it came to the ears of the jeweller at Seville, who, overjoyed with the conceit that he had found his jewels, and that our adventurer was the same Don Diego he was in search of, went hastily to the prison to enter his action against him, and to the notary's to seize the rings he had taken, as belonging to him. The many examinations and depositions, on account of this last accusation, helped to swell the bulk of the writings in this process, in which the solicitor, husband to our adventurer's designed mistress, who had been the cause of all this confusion, was employed by the jeweller of Seville, to manage his cause. He coming to inquire into the fact, knew the master-key to all the locks in his house, and understood that the party accused had been taken in his street. This made him suspect his design had been to rob him as well as his neighbours, and therefore finding himself particularly con-

cerned in this matter, he declared himſelf a party, and followed the buſineſs ſo hotly, that he had Don Diego examined again upon freſh circumſtances and articles, which he alleged againſt him; but our adventurer being diſcreet and ingenious, anſwered ſo cautiouſly, that he no way diſhonoured the party who provoked him, ſparing him for her ſake.

This was the poſture of affairs, when, through the ſolicitation of his friends, Don Diego was taken out of the hands of the criminal judge as not ſubject to his juriſdiction, and turned over to his own proper court, where the ſolicitor declared himſelf the principal proſecutor. Don Diego finding himſelf ſo hard preſſed, ſent the old woman, that had been meſſenger of love to the ſolicitor's wife, to adviſe her ingeniouſly to perſuade her huſband to deſiſt from his violent proſecution, or elſe he ſhould be obliged, in his own defence, to expoſe them both, and divulge that which would make them infamous. The jilt, who thought of nothing but her pleaſure, and how ſhe might ſecure the rings rather than her honour, took no notice of this admonition.

The judges and parties were ſtrangely perplexed about the circumſtances of this proceſs, becauſe none of them knew the ſecret; till a

length Don Diego finding he was daily drove to greater diſtreſs, by the obſtinacy of the ſolicitor, reſolved to clear himſelf of what he laid to his charge, to his own ſhame and confuſion. He gave a full account of the whole intrigue to a gentleman of his acquaintance, who was very intimate with the judge, and expounded the riddle to him; and having diligently weighed all the circumſtances, he reſolved to expoſe the whole naked truth in public, to ſave the honour of Don Diego, at the expence of the impertinent ſolicitor's reputation. The old woman privately depoſed what ſhe knew of the affair; the letter from the ſolicitor's wife's mother was produced, which ſhe had ſent to Don Diego. The jeweller of Seville was ſummoned, and being brought face to face with our adventurer, ſtood amazed, as if he had been thunderſtruck, and frankly owned that was not the man he ſought after. Hereupon the judge diſcharged the proceſs, ordering the rings to be reſtored to Don Diego, as being his proper goods; the maſter-key to be put into the hands of the ſolicitor for the ſame reaſon; and the letter to be delivered to his wife, as a token of her mother's affection.

This juſt judgment being pronounced, the jeweller and ſolicitor ſtood gazing upon one

another like two ſtatues, not knowing what to ſay, or how to look, and at laſt went away muttering; the jeweller vexed that he had travelled ſo far, and been at ſuch expence to ſo little purpoſe; and the ſolicitor in a rage, for having been the inſtrument of his own diſgrace. Don Diego, whoſe courage was cooled by the raillery of his friends, got off with his rings ſafe, valuing them much more than the ſport he was going to loſe them at, had he not been prevented by the misfortune he met with. Thus we conclude this adventure, obſerving the truth of the proverb, which ſays, "It is an ill wind which "blows nobody good."

ADVENTURE VII.

THOUGH the unaccountable Don Diego was diſcharged out of priſon, and cleared of the crimes laid to his charge, yet was he reſolved to impoſe a penalty on himſelf. He had been ſo much put out of countenance by his friends ripping up all the extravagant actions of his life, that it went to his very heart, and therefore he reſolved to baniſh himſelf for a time from Madrid, and endeavour to reform, rather in compliance to thoſe who wiſhed him well,

than for his own ſatisfaction. He ſet out for that city in Spain which is reckoned to abound in learning above any other in Europe; and in reality, ſciences are ſo common there, that they are not only taught by day in the ſchools, but at night in the cellars. This is the city of Salamanca, ſeated on the river the Spaniards call Tormes, which they reckon more fruitful than the Nile, becauſe its banks are covered with infinite plenty of ſeveral ſorts of delicious fruit, fit to pleaſe the moſt dainty palates.

This voluntary baniſhment was the more acceptable to Don Diego, becauſe the principal motive of it was to recover two thouſand ducats, become due to him as the only heir of his family, by the courteſy of his brothers, who were pleaſed to die out of kindneſs to him. He had ſubſtantial creditors to deal with, who brought him the ſum in lawful money, as ſoon as they heard of his arrival. This made him not return the ſooner, the wonders he had heard of Salamanca prevailing with him to make ſome ſtay there. Having ſatisfied his curioſity, he ſet out from thence doubly enriched, carrying away abundance of books, though perhaps principally out of oſtentation, like many others in this age, who have great numbers of valuable books, finely bound, but without ma-

king any other uſe of them than as hangings or pictures.

Being come back to Madrid, he locked up his ducats in a curious cabinet, with his rings and jewels, reſolving they ſhould not ſee the ſun, but lie buried, till he had ſome ſufficient occaſion to ſhow them the world again. The two firſt nights after his return home were dedicated to repoſe, and he diverted himſelf in turning over his new books; but when that ſhort term was expired, growing weary of this confinement, and fancying he forfeited the liberties and franchiſes of his natural inclination, he reſolved to go to take the air next night, and that earlier than uſual, that he might have more leiſure to walk the ſtreets of Madrid.

However, he could not put his deſign in execution, on account of the viſits he received from his friends, who, being informed of his return, came to welcome him. The forwardeſt in this point of civility was a gentleman called the Miraculous Knight, becauſe, though he had no eſtate or income, he made a very good figure at court, keeping a handſome retinue, and dreſſing as well as any man, which made many ſuſpect he had ſome underhand way of cheating; but they did him wrong, as will appear in the ſequel of this ſtory. Don Diego gave him an

account of the ſucceſs of his journey, and to confirm what he ſaid, opened his cabinet before him, and ſhowed him his ducats and jewels; for he was ſo full that his ſatisfaction overflowed. After much common diſcourſe of what had happened at Madrid during Don Diego's abſence, the Miraculous Knight took leave of him; and though he would fain have ſtayed him to ſupper, the Knight excuſed himſelf with much ceremony.

When he was gone, our adventurer received two or three viſits more, which kept him at home till near midnight, much againſt his will, becauſe they were people of no conſequence; but ſuch things muſt be often borne with in this world. At length they departed; Don Diego took a light ſupper, as if he had been upon earneſt buſineſs; and about one in the morning ſet out from his houſe, yet ſomewhat uneaſy in his mind, for having been ſo open-hearted with the Miraculous Knight, fearing leſt he, or ſome other by his inſtigation, ſhould plot againſt his ducats. Being diſturbed with theſe thoughts, he turned back to go home again, deſigning to remove his cabinet out of the lower room up ſtairs, as believing it ſafer there; and paſſing by a churchyard which was near his houſe, he heard a doleful voice, intermixed with many groans,

which ſeemed to come from the charnel-houſe, where the bones of the dead were laid up, which made his hair ſtand up an end, his eyes to ſtare, and his ears to give more than ordinary attention. He ſtopped ſhort, and heard the groans redouble; whereupon he began to conſider that it was one of the moſt heroic adventures that could befal a walking knight errant, and that if he did not attempt to ſee the end of it, he ſhould ever after have a worſe conceit of his courage.

He called to mind the adventure in the Apple Street, which was only a repreſentation by perſons diſguiſed, but concluded, that this being the real habitation of the dead, there could be no deceit. He drew near, and perceived a ſmall glimmering through a cranny in a board, and going round it, found a door, out of which there came more light. Being about to go in boldly, he trod on a dead man's dry rib, that ſnapped under his foot, at which noiſe a manly voice aſked him, "Who is there?" At the ſame time out came a handſome man, with a ſword in one hand, and a dark lanthorn in the other, ſo that there was no ſeeing him that held it. Don Diego perceiving the glittering of the ſword, drew his, and immediately the man that made towards him cried out, "Don Diego, my

" dear friend." He knew him by his voice, but not by his perſon, by reaſon of the ſhade of the lanthorn, and perceived it was the Miraculous Knight, who had been to viſit him that evening.

Don Diego amazed to meet him in that manner, aſked what he did there? " Alas, Don Die-
" go," ſaid he, " you come at a time when I am
" full of trouble; but, in ſhort, I muſt tell you,
" I have been married almoſt theſe two years to
" a young lady of quality, and yet no creature
" knows of it but only two friends, and the
" prieſt that married us. This young lady has
" ever ſince continued at her father's houſe,
" without being the leaſt ſuſpected by any bo-
" dy, either at home or abroad. Immediately
" after I left you, ſhe ſent for me, and told me,
" that her time was up, the pains began to come
" faſt upon her; that fearing her father's ſeve-
" rity, who would certainly murder her, if he
" diſcovered her offence, ſhe deſired me to take
" her away from his houſe, and convey her to
" ſome place where ſhe might be delivered with
" leſs dread. Being altogether ſurpriſed at this
" accident, and conſidering your houſe was clear,
" you not being married, I was going to put
" myſelf into your protection, and to commit
" my ſecret and this young lady's honour to

" your diſcretion. But as we were paſſing by " this churchyard, I conducting her with this " lanthorn, the throws came ſo faſt upon her, " that ſhe could go no farther, and I was for- " ced, as faſt as I could, to bring her into this " charnel-houſe, which, by good luck, I found " open."

The knight was juſt come to theſe laſt words, when the woman gave notice of her being there, crying out, Jeſus, Jeſus, and then fetching up a long ſigh, God be praiſed, ſaid ſhe, it is over. The knight ran haſtily to her, and ſo did Don Diego, and found ſhe was delivered of a beautiful child, born under moſt inauſpicious circumſtances, had they been ſuperſtitious, as entering into life in the very manſion of death. It was a ſtrange ſpectacle to ſee the poor lady ſtretched out upon ſo many dry bones, and the infant born amidſt the dead. The father took up the little babe, and wrapping it up in his cloak, recommended the mother to Don Diego, and went away with the child to a midwife's he had in fee ſeveral days before for that purpoſe, and ordered her to provide a nurſe.

Don Diego was left there by himſelf, with the lanthorn in his hand, comforting and encouraging the poor lying-in lady. There was ſo little candle in the lanthorn, that as ſoon as the

knight was gone it went out, leaving them in that dreadful darkneſs. I am in the wrong to call it dreadful, at leaſt to our adventurer, who moſt delighted in it. Whilſt he was taken up about this work of charity, one of the notableſt thieves in Madrid had got intelligence of his ducats, and underſtanding he had left them deſolate that night, he made to his houſe with a good pick-lock that opened all the doors. Having ſearched all the rooms, he met with the cabinet the treaſure was committed to, broke it open very dexterouſly, and ſeized the bag with all the jewels. Not ſo ſatisfied, he opened a trunk, whence he took two ſuits of clothes, and making all up into a bundle, with the gold in the middle, and the jewels tied up in a napkin, he laid it on his back, and made away with all poſſible expedition.

He was not gone far from Don Diego's houſe, when he ſpied the watch going the rounds, and before they could diſcover him, he fled towards the churchyard we laſt ſpoke of. The watch hearing him run, ſuſpected he muſt be ſome malefactor, and made after him; but he being light of heels, got to the charnel-houſe, where he dropped the bundle at the lying-in woman's feet, which ſtruck ſuch a terror into her, not knowing what it might be, that ſhe forgot all

her pains. Don Diego little thinking that he was put into poſſeſſion of his own goods, ſtepped out with his ſword in his hand, to know what was the occaſion of the noiſe he had heard. The thief hearing him walk over the dry bones of the dead, which crackled under his feet, thought it had been ſome evil ſpirit ſent by providence to puniſh him for his crime; for a wicked man fears every thing; and conſidering they could not find the theft upon him, choſe rather to fall into the hands of human devils, than of the infernal.

Coming out of the churchyard he meets the watch, who had purſued him full butt, they having laid in ambuſh to catch him; but the thief being ſtrong and ſkilful at his weapon, drawing a good back-ſword, laid about him ſo ſucceſsfully, that he made way through them, and got ſafe off.

In the meanwhile Don Diego coming out to the entrance of the churchyard, without meeting any thing, and hearing no more noiſe, thought it a raſhneſs to go any farther, and an indiſcretion to forſake the poor weak woman he was intruſted with, and therefore returned to her, whom he found full of grief, and complaining heavily againſt the Miraculous Knight, blaming his ſtay with ſuch words and expreſ-

ſions, as teſtified they came from a woman of family. Don Diego perceiving ſhe was ſomewhat recovered, offered to conduct her to a married man's houſe, who had been his ſervant, and lived cloſe by there. She conſented to the propoſal, he helped her up, gropping, and letting her reſt on his arm, led her gently to that houſe, where ſhe was courteouſly received, as well out of reſpect to him that brought her, as for the regard due to her beauty, which charmed all that beheld it. Had not Don Diego's thoughts been then wholly taken up with the care of his ducats, I cannot tell but he might eaſily have given way to be in love with that lady, for when he ſaw her by the light, he perceived beauty enough to enamour him. A midwife was ſent for to aſſiſt her in all that remains to be done after delivery, and in the meanwhile ſhe was put into ſuch a delicate neat bed, as might have ſtilled the thoughts of a jealous man, and lulled him aſleep. Let us leave them both there in this condition, and go ſee how the Miraculous Knight was ſpending his time, for he very well deſerved that name, fortune having in him given wonderful inſtances of her unaccountable favours.

He being very ſolicitous to have the child taken care of, becauſe it was indiſpoſed, and

conſidering the mother would be in trouble for his ſtay, deſired the nurſe's huſband to take a lanthorn, and go make his excuſe to Don Diego and the lady he would find with him, and to beg he would make proviſion for the unfortunate woman, putting her into ſome ſafe place, where ſhe might be furniſhed with what was neceſſary in her condition. When the man came to the churchyard, Don Diego was already gone to fulfil his requeſt, though he had not heard it. The nurſe's huſband coming into the charnel-houſe, where the knight had told him he ſhould find Don Diego and the mother of the child, and ſeeing nothing but the horrors of death, was going out backwards, not daring to turn his back upon all thoſe dreadful ſpectacles, for fear they ſhould riſe and fall upon him unawares. When he was near the door of the charnel-houſe, he happened to ſet his foot on the bundle the thief had dropped there, as he fled from the watch, and finding it ſink under him, cried out, fancying he had trod on ſome corpſe newly brought in, till drawing near it with his lanthorn, he found his miſtake, and perceived it was only a bundle of clothes. He conſidered with himſelf whether he ſhould carry it away or no; but concluding that the dead could lay no claim, he reſolved to lay it on his

back, thinking it very ſtrange that he ſhould be ſo well clad, where all people are left naked.

Don Diego having left the lady in ſafety, and being anxious for his treaſure, haſted home to ſee if all were ſafe, and coming to his houſe, went directly up ſtairs to the room where he had left his cabinet, and found it broke open, which touched him ſo to the quick, that he had like to have dropped down; but recovering himſelf, he perceived the miſchief had been done, his cabinet rifled, and his trunk open. Not knowing who to charge this upon, he concluded it was the Miraculous Knight had played him this game, whilſt he ſtaid to guard his lady; for his long ſtay gave occaſion to ſuſpect he might be guilty of this foul action. To loſe no time, he returned to the churchyard with more haſte than he came, fancying that the knight would not fail to be there to look for his wife, the better to counterfeit innocence. By good luck Don Diego came to the charnel houſe, juſt as the man ſent by the knight was going out. Our adventurer in a rage for the robbery, and fully concluding that was the knight, as he had before conceited, fell upon the man ſo furiouſly, that he dropped the bundle, calling him thief, and threatening to make an example of him. At the ſame time an officer

of the watch happened to paſs by, going home diſcontented for having ſpent the whole night patroling about with his companions, without lighting on any booty. He bid them both to keep the peace, and anſwer his queſtions, which they immediately obeyed; for in Spain the meaneſt officer of juſtice is much reſpected.

The day then began to break, and the heat of Don Diego's paſſion being ſomewhat over, he had leiſure to obſerve, that the man he had taken was not the knight, and the unknown perſon finding himſelf at liberty, and wiſely conſidering, that, though innocent, being found with the bundle upon him, he might be brought into trouble, he thought fit to make the beſt of his way, and truſt to his heels to bring him off. In ſhort, he vaniſhed in a moment, leaving Don Diego to anſwer for both. Whilſt the officer was putting himſelf into the poſture of an examiner, up comes the real thief, who having made his eſcape from the watch, had waited till it was day to come and carry off the bundle he had ſtole from among the dead, with whom he had left it in truſt. He diſcovered, at ſome diſtance, two men, which were our adventurer and the officer contending together; however, he by degrees drew near them very impudently, with hat in hand, liſtening to their diſcourſe,

and at the ſame time ſquinting upon the bundle. At laſt the officer touching Don Diego with his rod, commanded him, in the king's name, to follow him. The thief ſeeing them in motion, took up the bundle, by ſilent conſent of Don Diego and the officer, and followed them, each of them thinking he had been the other's ſervant.

Whilſt all theſe things were in agitation, the Miraculous Knight was fretting with impatience, expecting the return of the man he had ſent to Don Diego. Being tired with waiting, he went out to ſeek him, and coming to the churchyard, found neither the meſſenger, nor thoſe he had ſent him to. Thence he went on to Don Diego's houſe, where he heard the diſmal news of the robbery, but nobody could tell where he was. This was a mighty trouble to him, being at once concerned for the misfortune befallen his friend, and becauſe he knew not where the lady was that he had committed to his charge, though he did not queſtion but ſhe was in good hands, and that he had too much courage to forſake her.

In the meanwhile Don Diego going along with the officer, came to the juſtice's door, and looking about for the man that had taken up the bundle, whom, as has been ſaid, he took to

be the officer's man, and the officer concluded to be his, and not ſeeing him, he aſked the officer where he was, threatening to make him accountable for it. The officer reſenting his words, anſwered him boldly, That he was not now in a place where he could play his knaviſh pranks. This expreſſion put Don Diego into ſuch a heat, that he laid on the officer ſeveral ſtrokes with the flat of his ſword about his head, at whoſe cries the juſtice came out, and having heard both parties, and underſtanding Don Diego's quality, he ordered him to be confined to his houſe, and two officers to guard him.

The Miraculous Knight being tired with running up and down, without hearing any news of thoſe he ſought after, returned to his child's nurſe, whom he found unfit to ſuckle it. Her huſband flying from juſtice, had called there in a mighty fright, telling her, he was obliged to be gone, and abſcond for ſome time, becauſe ſome ſtolen goods had been found upon him, and therefore he muſt get out of the way for fear of being thrown into gaol; and, without explaining himſelf any farther, he ſcampered off, leaving his wife in ſuch a conſternation, that her milk immediately went away. This new accident put the Miraculous Knight into ſuch

confuſion, that had he not been a man of great temper, it would have gone near to diſtract him. He had the charge of a child, and was deprived of the means of giving it neceſſary ſuſtenance to ſupport life. In this perplexity, heaven put it into his thoughts to ſend for a hackney coach, into which he went with the infant, carrying it to a village near Madrid, called Xetafe, deſigning to have it bred there very privately. The thief, who had again ſo boldly poſſeſſed himſelf of the bundle before Don Diego and the officer, and ſeemed to follow, had dropped them at the firſt turning of a ſtreet; and to prevent being followed by the tract, thought it beſt to depart Madrid, to enjoy the fruit of his wicked ſucceſs with more ſafety, diſguiſing the clothes and jewels, with the aſſiſtance of ſome knaviſh brokers and goldſmiths, who made it their buſineſs to metamorphoſe ſtolen goods. The lying-in woman was infinitely afflicted, being in a manner forſaken by her lover, and by him who had brought her into that houſe among people that were altogether ſtrangers to her, who nevertheleſs attended her with all poſſible care, in purſuance of the orders given by Don Diego.

Her father and mother miſſing her, left no ſtone unturned to hear what was become of her, but all in vain. In ſhort, there was nothing

but trouble and confuſion among all the parties concerned, each had their affliction and ſorrow, as well as the other.

The Miraculous Knight came to Xetafe in the evening, where he found all he had occaſion for to his heart's content; he had put the infant into a good nurſe's hands in leſs than an hour, and was preparing to return to Madrid. As he was getting into the coach, he heard a mighty noiſe in the inn; he turned in again, and ſpied a man, who held another by the collar, and tugged him about, as if he would have throttled him. "Have I got you," ſaid he, "thou villain, thou thief; you are the man "that robbed me about a year ago at my houſe "in Toledo; I am reſolved I will cut your "throat, that your blood may make ſatisfac-"tion for my goods you ſtole. This bundle "you bring is certainly ſome freſh robbery you "have committed at Madrid, for which it is "likely ſeveral as unfortunate people as myſelf "are now at their wits end."

The houſe was immediately filled with people at the cries of this paſſionate man. The Miraculous Knight broke through the throng, came up to the perſon impeached, examined him, and by his anſwers perceived he was the thief that had robbed Don Diego, who, as providence

had ordered it, took up his lodging in that inn with a merchant of Toledo, whom he had robbed ſome time before. The mayor of the town was called, the bundle opened in his preſence, and an inventory taken of all there was in it, which was left in the cuſtody of the maſter of the houſe. The criminal was put into gaol, and the knight returned to Madrid, to carry Don Diego the good news, which was very acceptable to him; and in return, he carried the knight to ſee his lying-in lady, who was no leſs overjoyed at this viſit.

Don Diego was much troubled in his conſcience, for having ſuſpected the Miraculous Knight to be guilty of ſo foul an action, yet he was in ſome meaſure excuſable, having grounded this conceit on the common received opinion, that the knight could not live at ſo high a rate without being concerned in ſome baſe employ; but now Don Diego underſtood that he was maintained by the lady that fed his amorous flame, ſhe being the only daughter of very rich parents; and having for four years laſt paſt ſupplied him plentifully with as much as kept him handſomely at court. Don Diego being eaſed of the care of the young lady, applied himſelf in the next place to recover what

had been ſtolen from him. He got an order from court to fetch up the thief, to have him tried at Madrid; where, as ſoon as he came, he confeſſed all his crimes, and for his ingenuity was rewarded with a halter. Don Diego was again put in poſſeſſion of his goods, not but that his purſe paid for it, becauſe juſtice is a precious thing, and muſt be purchaſed at a dear rate. The firſt nurſe's huſband was recalled from his voluntary baniſhment.

In the meanwhile the Miraculous Knight being deſirous to deliver the lady's father and mother from the great pain and trouble they were in, applied himſelf to ſeveral perſons of note, as prelates, religious men of known piety, miniſters of ſtate, who being prevailed upon by the continual ſubmiſſive entreaties of that beautiful creature the knight's miſtreſs, or rather bride, took the matter in hand with ſuch zeal and diſcretion, that in a few days they prevailed on the father and mother, and perſuaded them not only to forgive the daughter and her lover, but to approve of their marriage, as if they had been really conſenting to it. Love, which had been the cauſe of the offence, was now the chief pleader in this cauſe, and ſo entirely gained the hearts of both father and

mother, that upon making the reconciliation, they demanded the infant to entail their eſtate upon him.

All their relations were invited to the celebration of the nuptials; for all the ceremonies of the church had been performed before. Don Diego took particular ſatisfaction in his friend's good fortune, and contracted a more intimate friendſhip with him than before. On the other hand, the knight ſtudied nothing more than how to find opportunities of expreſſing how ſenſible he was of his obligation to him, for his care, and the ſignal ſervices he had done his beloved, who owned herſelf no leſs indebted to him for his kindneſs.

Moſt people thought that Don Diego having had ſo much experience of the many troubles and misfortunes the life of man is ſubject to, his own having been ſo often in danger, would for the future have lived within ſome bounds, and endeavoured to employ his time better, but the world was much deceived in him. He was ſo highly pleaſed with the ſucceſs of his adventures, that it emboldened him to look out for others ſtill more dangerous. Beſides, he fancied that the night adventures, befallen to other men, which parents tell their children by the fireſide, as wonderful and prodigious accidents,

were nothing but mere cheats and fables to ſcare fools; becauſe thoſe men being frighted at the firſt ſhow of danger, and wanting courage to ſee the utmoſt of it, have impoſed their wild notions upon others for wonders. In ſhort, they are generally weak people that tell us ſtories of ſpirits and hobgoblins; for there is no churchyard ſo frightful as a timorous man's heart.

ADVENTURE VIII.

The vanity which had filled Don Diego's heart, for having come off ſo advantageouſly in ſo many perilous adventures, made him deſpiſe all ſorts of dangers. He thought himſelf now proof againſt any accidents, and believed that fortune could not control his reſolution. Upon this conceit he ſtill ſought new perils, to give the greater proofs of his valour, and gain the reputation of a hero, but inſtead of purchaſing that good name, he was reckoned a raſh man of an extravagant temper; for whoſoever aſpires to be ſingular, draws upon himſelf either the envy or the ſcorn of others.

Don Diego was informed, that the travelling

waggons, which pass through the sea of dust in summer, and of dirt in winter, that is, betwixt Toledo and Madrid, performed their journey by night. For this reason, and that he might have the opportunity of conversing with darkness, not to delight his eyes with seeing Toledo once more, though a place the sun itself beholds with pleasure, he resolved to undertake that great progress, which is just twelve leagues. He was also moved to it by an earnest desire he had to hear the railing and ribaldry there is betwixt the mean sort of people who travel that way. For this purpose, he put on the servant's habit the solicitor's wife had before persuaded him to wear for her sake, lest being clad according to his quality, he should happen to give a check to the freedom of those sort of people, and be disappointed of the satisfaction he expected to receive in their Billingsgate and nonsense. Having armed himself with sword and dagger, he left Madrid about eight at night.

The company he had in the waggon consisted of some country fellows, such as contract friendship over a pot of wine; for in Spain they drink no ale. Don Diego took his place as it fell to his lot, for no compliments are used there. As soon as the wheels were got off the stones, every one began to let his clack loose, making

a hideous noiſe, like a clock when the ſpring breaks, and all the wheels run off in confuſion out of their ordinary courſe. Our adventurer was amazed at this Babylonian confuſion of tongues, and no leſs at the barbarous expreſſions he heard; but was pleaſed, that though the diſcourſe was not rhetorical, yet to him it was new. One told how he had paid his ſoy at taking leave; another, how he had been treated by his friends on that account; another, that he had picked his father's lock to get money; a fourth, that he bid nobody farewell, for fear of being ſtopped by his creditors. In ſhort, it was a mad medley of open confeſſion of all their exploits, and ſcarce three words of ſenſe to be made out of it.

With this pleaſant diſcourſe they came to Illeſcas, where being at the inn door, before any of them alighted out of the waggon, they fell a brawling about a leather bag, which ſerved one of the company for a cloak-bag and portmanteau, and being now miſſing, the owner would have the waggoner to be accountable for it. They all ſet up the cry againſt him, and from foul words came to blows, ſo that the poor waggoner was knocked down before the inn, much hurt, where the maid of the inn then was, who ſhed ſalt tears upon the body of her

unfortunate driver; but he was ſoon revenged, for he that ſtruck him, haſting to get out of the waggon, to make his eſcape, hung his foot in a rope, and fell headlong upon the ſtones, where he lay for dead. The officers of juſtice, who are much of the temper of ſurgeons, that wiſh for nothing ſo much as wounds and broken bones, came in readily to keep the peace, being as nimble with their feet as with their hands, when they ſee they have their prey in their nets. They preſently examined, took depoſitions, and ſent ſome to gaol; and for the more ſecurity, they ſeized the waggon and mules; all which they rather do, to ſerve their own turn than the public good.

Don Diego, who ſtood aſide, as not concerned in the quarrel, was nevertheleſs taken up for being one of the company; and had been infallibly committed to priſon, but that he happened to be known by ſome of the country inferior gentry, who prevailed with the mayor of the town to diſcharge him. His diſguiſe was the occaſion of his being put to that trouble; and therefore when a man goes where he is not known, it is neceſſary his habit ſhould recommend him, becauſe by that moſt people gueſs at his quality, and ſometimes at his humour. He ſtaid ſeven or eight days at Illeſcas, diverting himſelf with

the agreeable frankneſs of a travelling damſel, that was going from Toledo to Madrid, to preſent the courtiers with a freſh treat. She lay in the ſame inn with Don Diego, who falling into a love-ſick fit, ſhe endeavoured to apply the cure, not by adminiſtering potions or cordials, but by bleeding his purſe, whence ſhe drew ſome ounces of gold. But this metal being the very blood and ſpirit that ſupports life, a few of the firſt evacuations put him into ſuch a condition, that he reſolved to make uſe of no more of that phyſician's preſcriptions, but to diſmiſs her, or rather diſcard himſelf. To this purpoſe, he hired a mule, as unlucky a jade as the other he had quitted; only that being uſed to the pranks of the former, he thought the latter more tolerable.

This mule having been hard wrought, and ill fed, had much ado to move, though the rider did not forget to put her in mind with his ſpurs. She ſtumbled every ſtep ſhe went, which ſeemed to forbode that he would not go far without a fall, and ſo it happened; this might have been more fatal to him than it was, had he not been ſo frequently forewarned of what he was to expect. It was a bleſſing he was ſo well upon his guard againſt his fall, for he muſt have broke his neck, or not much ſhort of it, being like to

tumble into a quarry, had he not thrown himſelf off on the other ſide. Getting up, like a good Chriſtian, he uſed charity with his neighbour, helping his ſteed upon her legs, but renounced riding any more. He led her for a good league to an inn, to which he came juſt with the dawn of the day, having ſet out of Illeſcas about midnight, and travelling all the reſt of the night, in compliance with his old humour. Here he made a plentiful breakfaſt, or rather a ſupper, for he inverted times and ſeaſons, breakfaſting when others ſupped, and went to bed.

About four in the afternoon he was waked out of his ſleep, by a poſt-boy's horn, who came along with a meſſenger, ſent by order of council, and reckoned a moſt ſharp-ſighted fellow at knowing a thief, though it is likely he was not ſo well ſkilled as imagined, ſince he knew not himſelf; but it is the ſureſt way to ſet a thief to catch a thief. This man was come poſt from Madrid, in purſuit of a parcel of cunning knaves, well ſkilled at making other men's goods their own; who had now given a ſufficient proof of their abilities, at the coſt of one of the richeſt perſons of quality about the court. He alighted at this inn, ſearched it narrowly, and then examined the hoſt and all his gueſts very ſeverely. Don Diego was raiſed to be preſent at this.

examination, and being in diſguiſe, had paid for all, but that the meſſenger happened to know him.

Having made a thorough ſearch and inquiry in the inn, he was very much concerned that he could hear no news of the criminals, nor ſo much as find any body to bring into trouble; for thoſe men deſire no more than to find a ſubject fitly diſpoſed, and they know how to give it a form. Not knowing whether he had better go on, or turn back, he ſtood at the inn gate, inquiring of all comers and goers; Don Diego bearing him company, and treating him with much complaiſance, in requital for the favour he had ſhowed him. Juſt as the day was ſhutting in, they diſcovered at a diſtance, a funeral coming towards them, attended by four religious and four laymen in mourners habits. Theſe came about a bier, carried by two luſty mules, on which was a coffin covered with rich black baize. The four religious men who came foremoſt, ſtopped as ſoon as they came into the hamlet, telling the others, they muſt reſt a little, and ſay there a ſhort prayer for the dead, that they might preſerve the living. The officer bleſſing himſelf when they came up to him, aſked, Whether they had not met ſuch and ſuch people, ſo and ſo habited, who had committed a notable

robbery at Madrid? "We have ſeen nobody," replied one of the religious men, "but here is "a robbery committed by a famous female "thief, ſhe alone was concerned in it." "Where "is that robbery," anſwered the officer full of concern, "and who is that female robber?" "Alas! Sir," ſaid the religious man, "the rob- "bery is in the coffin, uncovering the bier, "and ſhe that has committed it is death. This "is a noble body, and as precious as gold." Then taking the officer by the hand, and dragging him roughly towards the coffin, for he was very ſtrong, "Come, Sir," ſaid he, "come and "ſee this unaccountable robbery; come and "ſee what mortals are ſubject to." The officer, who was not uſed to converſe with the inhabitants of the other world, not liking that ſort of invitation, anſwered him in a very angry tone: "Pray let me go, father; I am not come hither "to call in queſtion the actions of death; be- "ſides I have no ſtomach to look into a coffin; "the fineſt creature in the world ſtinks within "four-and-twenty hours after it is dead; and "though you compare that body to gold, I do "not think it as incorruptible as that precious "metal, which alone has that privilege by na- "ture." This ſaid, he mounted a-horſeback, and went his way.

Don Diego continued in the inn with this funeral retinue. The drivers unloaded their mules under a great portal, they were carried into the ſtable, and a table covered near the coffin, which they watched very carefully, and there they ſupped, inviting our adventurer to keep them company, becauſe they ſaw he was alone. He ſat down among them without any ceremony, and they ſoon fell to downright drinking of healths upon healths, which muſt have proved everlaſting, had they received any addition by their frequent hearty draughts.

The hoſteſs ſomewhat ſurpriſed, as well as Don Diego, to ſee thoſe mourning companions, ſo little mortified, whilſt they were attending death, very innocently ſaid to them, "Cheer "up, gentlemen, cheer up, make much of your-"ſelves, and be merry, for I dare ſay, there are "others that lament for that poor body you "bring, God give it reſt." He that ſat at the upper end of the table, and dealt about the cups as he thought fit, anſwered her, "You have "ſpoke ſuch a ſentence, ſweet heart, as I little "expected would drop from that barren mouth. "It is very certain, the houſe from which this "rich body came, for it is no poor one, as you "call it, is now under very extrordinary afflic-"tion; and what grieves them the more, is, to

" conſider that this perſon was taken away ſud-
" denly, to their eternal ſorrow: He died in my
" arms, and my hands buried him. Pray to
" God that we may carry him ſafe to the place
" appointed, and be not ſcandalized to ſee us
" take a little refreſhment; the trouble of at-
" tending him a-foot, requires good nouriſh-
" ment." This ſaid, he drank to the hoſteſs's health, and clapping a great glaſs of wine into her hand, deſired ſhe would pledge him; for men call the complying with their extravagancies doing them honour. Amidſt this multitude of healths, one of the mourners found his indiſpoſition, his head proving too weak for the fumes of the wine he had drunk. He began to ſtammer, and talk an unknown tongue, and at laſt dropt down in a trance, that made him look like the departed perſon, for he fell into profound ſleep, the perfect image of death.

It was about ten at night, when ſuch of the company, as were moſt in their ſenſes, thinking it time to depart, becauſe they would not lie there all night, laid the bier upon the mules, which had been as well fed as their maſters, and paid the hoſteſs very generouſly, who gave them a thouſand bleſſings, and made as many prayers for the departed. They deſired her to take care of the man that was aſleep, who would

follow them when he awaked; and conſidering that the mourner's habit he had on was of no uſe for him to ſtay there, they ſtripped him of it, ſeeming deſirous to hire another man in his ſtead to complete their number.

Don Diego prompted by his helliſh curioſity, for we may well give ſuch a name to that which pretends to dive into thoſe things it is no way concerned with, and being very deſirous to be particularly informed whither that funeral was going, and who the dead perſon was, offered them to fill up that vacant place, and put on the mourning robe. They having found him to be a good companion at the ſupper, took another view of him, obſerving that he had the looks of a man of courage, and a good guard, and therefore received him with open arms, inſtead of the other that lay entranced under the power of Bacchus, and ſo they ſet out of the inn merrily.

No ſooner were they out of the village, but they left the highway, ſtriking acroſs the country, at which our new mourner was not a little ſurpriſed, not knowing whether they did it through inadvertency or deſignedly, but durſt not aſk. They travelled in this manner about two hours, till they came to a very uncouth mountain, all rocks and woods, the habitation

of wolves, wild boars, and other ſavage creatures. When they were got far into the mountain, they halted, and one of the gang, a very ill looked fellow, in a very haughty tone, ſaid, ſo far good, brethren, it is now time to divide this body. Well ſaid, anſwered the reſt, you are in the right, this is a convenient place to divide it. Our adventurer was never ſo ſtartled in his life, as at the hearing of this propoſal, not able to imagine to what purpoſe they would uſe that body ſo barbarouſly. He drew a little aſide, and preſently perceived they were all falling at variance about ſharing the limbs of the dead body. From words they came to blows, drawing out ſhort hangers and piſtols they had under their long robes, as well the religious as the ſeculars, which Don Diego had not diſcovered before. They grew to ſuch a heat, that after much clattering of their ſwords, and many wounds given, they fired their piſtols, which put the mules into ſuch a fright, that they fell a ſnorting, braying, and running as faſt as their legs could carry them. Don Diego run after to ſtop them, but they were ſo ſwift, that before he could overtake them they were got into a hollow way, and ſo narrow, that it was impoſſible to paſs by, and come before them; ſo that he was forced to follow them with much

trouble; for beſides that it was dark, there was ſcarce any ſign of a road, ſo that he ſtumbled at every ſtep, and very often fell down upon tufts of briars and brambles, which would have torn his legs, but that he had boots on. However, ſtill hoping to get out from among thoſe buſhes, he travelled about a league, with the horrors of death always before his eyes, and thinking on the ſtrange and ſudden converſion of thoſe religious men into ſoldiers, wearing ſwords and piſtols about them inſtead of beads and breviaries. He was amazed at their wickedneſs and barbarity, in deſigning to cut in pieces a body, which, if of the quality they repreſented it, deſerved to be preſerved entire; for this he thought was a practice altogether unuſual among Chriſtians, who allow of the opening of bodies to embalm them, but not of quartering them like cattle.

Whilſt he was taken up with theſe thoughts, he found himſelf near a ſhepherd's cottage, where providence ordered it, that the mules ſtopped of themſelves, which if they had not, they would have fallen into a precipice with the dead body. The ſhepherds alarmed by the barking of the dogs, came out of their cottage with light, and were ſomewhat ſtartled, ſeeing this diſmal funeral pomp. Then Don Diego

muffled up in his mourning weed, in as few words as he could, informed them that he had loſt his way in the dark, and was carrying a dead body, inquiring whether there was not ſome village hard by where he might reſt him till day. Thoſe good people being willing charitably to aſſiſt that wandering mourner, conducted him to the village, where he found a reverend curate, who had formerly had his ſwing in the world, and was now by the frowns, or rather the kindneſs of fortune, brought to this place, where he ſpent his days happily in his ſtudies and peace. He lodged the living in his own houſe, and the dead body in the church; and it was very good luck to meet with ſuch an hoſt, as had lodging both for the living and the dead. The ſexton and others belonging to the church were called, who carried the coffin and the travelling corpſe into the chapel belonging to the patron of the church, who was lord of the village. Don Diego took leave of the ſhepherds that had conducted him, and contented them both with good words and bounty, a ſort of payment not common. Being left alone with the good curate, he gave him a relation of his ſtrange adventure; and his hoſt having given him a glaſs of wine, and ſome preſerved quinces, conducted him to a bed ſo neat, that it

added much to the inclination he had before to ſleep; ſo that though he had thought to have lain there only the remaining part of the night, he ſtuck by it ſo long, that when he got up he could go no farther a journey than from the bed to the table, living that day like a true courtier. The good prieſt was very well inclined to make much of Don Diego, who was a very pleaſant companion, and therefore deſired him to ſtay there till next day, to ſee whether any body would come to inquire after the corpſe. Don Diego liked his propoſal, and conſented to it. After dinner, the curate, to divert our adventurer, carried him out awalking about the village, which was agreeably ſeated; and ſitting by a pleaſant ſpring, they fell into diſcourſe of news, by which Don Diego perceived that the curate had not been bred among peaſants. This obſervation, together with his own natural curioſity to inquire after every thing, moved him to deſire the prieſt to tell him how he came to ſettle his abode in that country dwelling. The other being of a complaiſant temper, to comply with his gueſt's requeſt, addreſſed himſelf to him as follows:

"I was born at Seville; the only kindneſs "fortune would have me indebted to her for, "that I might not call myſelf altogether unfor-

"tunate; but ſince it is below the character of "a brave ſoul to blame the ſtars, let us proceed. "My father was of noble extraction, and more "famous for his virtue than for wealth. He "cauſed me to be inſtructed in human and di- "vine learning, that he might leave me a never "failing inheritance; and my genuis ſuiting "with the employment my father had choſen "for me, I outſtripped moſt of my fellow ſtu- "dents, and ſoon took my degree of doctor of "the civil law. The fame of this being ſpread "abroad throughout the city, made many am- "bitious to marry me into their families. I "had ſome beautiful maids, with good fortunes, "propoſed to me, ſufficient baits to allure ſen- "ſuality and covetouſneſs; but having as yet "no inclination to confine myſelf to the bonds "of matrimony, I could not approve of any of "the propoſals; ſo that having rejected ſo much "wealth and ſo many beauties, as might have "moved the moſt inſenſible to pleaſure and "avarice; and having ſo often withſtood the "perſuaſions of all thoſe that endeavoured to "engage me in matrimony, it was generally "concluded that I had ſome ſecret averſion to "women; but the charms and perfections of a "certain lady baniſhed the notion conceived of "my being a woman-hater. Her perſonal

" beauty, and excellent wit, were irreſiſtible
" weapons, and indiſſoluble ſpells, that conquer-
" ed and enſlaved all ſuch as could gain admit-
" tance to her. Among the many that aſpired
" to this honour, ſhe admitted of my addreſſes,
" and not many days after, with the joint con-
" ſent of her friends and mine, the knot of per-
" fect union betwixt us was tied in the church.
" I lived with her two years in a happy condi-
" tion; and conſidering the mutability of world-
" ly affairs, I may ſay that was a long time; but I
" muſt not dwell upon thoſe thoughts, the remem-
" brance of them would but refeſh the wounds
" which the loſs of her has made in my heart.

" This dear better half of me had a brother,
" whoſe youthful gallantries grew into ſuch
" ſcandalous extravagancies, that he became
" odious to all the inhabitants of Seville. He
" often fell into the hands of juſtice, and went
" through the diſgrace of a gaol, whence my
" care, or rather my purſe, ſtill delivered him;
" for it is certain money is the ſureſt friend upon
" all occaſions. A ſcandalous diſorderly courſe
" of life was become ſo habitual to him, that
" inſtead of being reſtrained by the conſidera-
" tion of ſuch ſhameful puniſhments undergone,
" ſince virtue had no power over him, he ſtill
" gave himſelf up inordinately to vice. Per-

" ceiving that whatſoever courſe of mildneſs or
" ſeverity I took, it was impoſſible for me to
" overcome his vicious inclinations; I forbid
" him my houſe, and ordered all my ſervants
" to keep him out if he came; but my orders
" were in vain. A lawgiver muſt proportion
" the power the ſubjects have to obey, to the
" laws he enacts; for if they cannot be obſer-
" ved, they make the lawgiver contemptible,
" and are ſometimes the cauſe of diſturbing the
" public peace, and the ſource of many troubles.
" This was my caſe; and when I call to mind
" theſe things, I cannot forbear ſhedding tears.
" I ſhould be aſhamed to expoſe my weakneſs
" before you, were I not convinced that you
" will think me excuſable, when you have heard
" the cauſe.

" My wife loved this young man, as nature
" obliged her, and as her only brother, ſo that
" his debauchery and lewd life no way dimi-
" niſhed her affection, and therefore ſhe counte-
" nanced his coming into my houſe, and ſuffer-
" ed him to viſit her in my abſence. He had
" ſpies that followed me continually, and care-
" fully gave him notice of my return, that he
" might be gone, or at leaſt hide himſelf before
" I came home. But when ill fate purſues us,
" it overtakes us in thoſe very ways we take to

" avoid it. They uſed to hide him in my " chamber, in a corner behind the bed where " my wife and I lay; and this contrivance ha- " ving often proved ſucceſsful, they ſtill made " uſe of it whenſoever they had occaſion. It " happened that going home one evening, and " entering that chamber without thinking any " thing, the young man having been failed by " his ſpies, was ſurpriſed, and thinking to hide " himſelf haſtily, his foot hitched in a table, and " he fell flat on the ground. I hearing the fall, " without ſeeing who it was, for day was ſhut in, " ran in ſwiftly and laid hold of him, as he was " riſing to get into his hiding place. Unhappy " haſte! I clapt my hand unfortunately on a " dagger he wore by his ſide, and thinking he " had been a thief, ſtabbed him three times with " it, and he dropt down. At the ſame time I " was ſenſible of my miſtake by his voice; and " being ſtruck with horror at this misfortune, " let him go, and drew back. He having ſtill " ſtrength enough, got up with his ſword in his " hand to revenge himſelf, and puſhing at ran- " dom in the dark, thruſt my wife, who was " come running in upon the noiſe, through the " body, and then dropt down dead. If he de- " ſigned that thruſt to kill me, he well knew " where to give me my mortal wound, ſince I

" lived more in his ſiſter's life than in my own.
" By this time my ſervants came all in with
" lights, to increaſe the grief and horror of ſee-
" ing one that held me ſo dear, die in my arms.
" As ſoon as ſhe was dead, my ſorrow prevailed
" ſo far upon me, that to make ſome amends
" for my inconſiderate offence, I went to deliver
" myſelf up into the hands of juſtice, like one
" in deſpair, accuſing myſelf of the murder of
" my brother-in-law and wife. I was caſt into
" priſon till the buſineſs came to a trial; but
" my affliction ſwelled to ſuch an unlimited ex-
" ceſs that it diſtracted me; ſo that from the
" common gaol I was removed to the mad-
" houſe; where, for a long time, I was the ridi-
" culous diverſion of my enemies, who came to
" ſee me, for the ſatisfaction of making me their
" ſcorn. However, through God's mercy, I re-
" covered of that diſtemper, though it ſeemed
" incurable. I was then ſet at liberty, having
" ſuſtained a conſiderable loſs in my eſtate,
" which had been conſumed both in ſuing out
" my pardon, and defraying the charges of the
" law, amounting to a conſiderable ſum.

" At that time an uncle of mine, threeſcore
" and ten years of age, who was curate here,
" fell ſick of a hectic fever, and being willing I
" ſhould ſucceed him in this place, as knowing

"I was well enough diſpoſed for this profeſſion, "he obtained of his holineſs to take off the ir- "regularity I had incurred; after which I re- "ceived holy orders, and ſo became capable of "holding this benefice, which he reſigned up "to me. This is the occaſion of my coming "to ſettle in ſuch a ſolitary country manſion, ſo "agreeable to my temper, where my only care "is to fulfil the duty of my function to the beſt "of my power. What ſpare hours I have are "ſpent in reading good books, the better to "enable myſelf to inſtruct thoſe ſouls commit- "ted to my charge. Thus do I ſpend my days, "expecting till it ſhall pleaſe God to call me to "give an account of my actions."

Don Diego admiring that reverend curate's ſtrange fortune, commended his reſolution of ſpending the reſt of his days in that ſolitary place. Thus diſcourſing together of the happineſs of a country life, they came to the curate's church, which they found open; and that being unuſual at ſuch a time of day, the curate went in, and found ſeveral perſons there in mourning, who had juſt brought the body of the patron of the church, and lord of the village, lately dead, and were in deep conteſt with the vicar and ſexton, becauſe they had laid a coffin and ſtrange corpſe in the chapel, which

was reſerved only for that family. The curate diſcreetly pacified thoſe people, and Don Diego coming in at the ſame time, concerned that his dead body could find reſt nowhere, and that they were for turning it out, deſired thoſe gentlemen to allow him the term of eight days, in which time he offered to make out that his corpſe belonged to the perſon they had then brought, and in caſe of failure, he promiſed to remove it. His requeſt was granted, upon the condition by him propoſed. I know not whether it was an enthuſiaſtic fit of prophecy or madneſs that made him talk ſo, for they ſay that madmen ſpeak prophetically ſometimes; the event will decide it. The truth is, he told the curate he had made uſe of that ſtratagem, believing that thoſe people would be gone the next day, and then they two might conſult where to bury that ſtray corpſe that was left upon his hands, and on which he would beſtow that laſt charitable act of Chriſtian piety.

All the people of the village were concerned at their lord's death, which they ſaid was through too much grief, conceived on account of a robbery committed upon him, to the value of twenty-five thouſand ducats in ready money and jewels. This being a robbery in which ſeveral perſons muſt have a hand, all that

were any ways concerned, in hopes of being heirs to the family, took ſpecial care, for their own ends, to have all poſſible ſearch made after the robbers; ſo that having ſent out officers and other people ſeveral ways, ſome of them at the entrance of a wood found a man whom they took upon ſuſpicion, as well on account of his ill look, as becauſe upon examination he gave no good account of himſelf. They preſently ſearched him upon the ſpot, and found about him ſufficient circumſtantial proofs for a farther trial; for in his pockets they found hooks, picklocks, &c. They that took him carried him to the next village, which happened to be the ſame where Don Diego was, and being put to the rack, he ſoon owned as much as they deſired, and diſcovered ſtrange ſecrets.

He confeſſed he was the eighth perſon concerned in the mighty robbery committed at Madrid, of a cabinet full of jewels and gold, of a very great value. That for the better removing it out of Madrid without danger, they had contrived to diſguiſe themſelves, ſome in the habit of religious men, and others in the apparel of mourners that attend at funerals; then to put their booty into a coffin, upon a bier carried by two mules, all covered with black baize, and to pretend it was a dead corpſe they were

attending to the place of burial. That this contrivance had ſucceeded well enough, carrying them off at their eaſe, and even in ſight of ſuch as might be concerned in the loſs. That he the deponent falling aſleep through wearineſs at Xetafe, where the whole gang refreſhed themſelves, they had left him behind, and taken off his mourner's garb; but that when he awaked he run after them, knowing whither they were to go, to get his part of the booty. That before he could come up with them, his companions had fallen out about dividing the robbery, and had fought ſo furiouſly at ſword and piſtol, which they had under their habits, that he found two dead upon the ſpot, and the reſt mortally wounded. One had loſt an arm, another was ham-ſtrung, a third had his head cloven, a fourth half his face ſliced off. In ſhort, they were all ſo mortified, that every one had left ſome of his fleſh and much blood on the field of battle. That beſides, he left them half mad, and curſing one another bitterly, becauſe, whilſt they were in their fury, murdering one another, a ſtranger taken inſtead of the deponent had drove away the mules with the theft, ſo that they knew not what was become of it, and he was then going to hear ſome news of them.

By this ample confeſſion, the examiner plainly perceived this was the robbery committed on the lord of the village, for grief whereof he was dead. He run immediately to the curate, and told him all this wonderful news in the preſence of Don Diego, at which both he and his gueſt were ſo ſurpriſed and aſtoniſhed, that for ſome time they could move nothing but their eyes and hands, ſo much were they overjoyed at this ſtrange adventure. Being recovered from this tranſport, they went together to the church, and to the chapel where the two coffins were, the one of the lord, and the other of his treaſure, which Providence had ordered he ſhould follow when dead, as well as living, ſince his heart was in it. They preſently opened it in preſence of ſeveral witneſſes, every one admiring how ingeniouſly thoſe thieves had diſtributed their prize, conſiſting in three ſorts of things of value, ſilver, gold, and precious ſtones.

Then Don Diego plainly underſtood the riddle of the falſe religious man, when he told the officer, who met them at Xetafe, that it was a precious body, as noble as gold and ſilver from head to foot, &c. He might alſo boaſt that he, once in his life, had the gift of prophecy, when he ſaid before, that his dead corpſe was near akin to the patron of the church, which he

ſufficiently made out; and might have added, it was the relation he loved beſt, ſince he died for love of it. The news was immediately ſent to the gentleman that was heir to the party deceaſed, who came with the meſſenger to take poſſeſſion of that treaſure. He being willing to ſhow mercy to the thief that was taken, as the cauſe of his recovering ſo much wealth, ordered the gaoler to contrive that the malefactor might eſcape, as if it had been by want of care in ſecuring him, which was accordingly put in execution.

All the gentleman now wanted was to ſatisfy the earneſt deſire he had of being acquainted with our adventurer, that he might make him a preſent, or at leaſt to return him thanks, for that through his means, and the good fortune that attended him, the robbery was conducted to ſuch a place of ſafety; but Don Diego, who had a generous ſoul, deſiring no acknowledgment of this ſort, ſhunned all occaſions of meeting that gentleman, who paid all the charges very nobly, and gave the two mules to the curate, who durſt not refuſe the preſent coming from his lord, though they were none of his. This done, he returned to Madrid, taking along with him the precious corpſe, to be buried in another tomb.

Don Diego was satisfied with his intention of going to Toledo, without proceeding any farther, and, at the request of that good man, the curate, staid a week longer with him, passing the time in discourse of man's sovereign good, and the peace and tranquillity of such as are free from worldly passions, and the true blessings of this life. When our adventurer took his leave, he was forced to admit of half the present the lord had made the curate, that is, of one of the mules, in regard he had been the cause of that bounty. Don Diego, whose heart was haughty, could scarce be prevailed on to take it, but was constrained at length to submit, rather out of complaisance than covetousness. They embraced, and parted with sincere affection, Don Diego promising to write to him often, and to send to him the news of the court, as the most diverting present to those that have known the world. The hopes of thi correspondence alleviated the curate's trouble for this separation; and the desire of returning to Madrid made our adventurer try whether his mule had any shard of heels.

ADVENTURE IX.

It had been happy for Don Diego to have made a longer ſtay with that reverend churchman, whoſe pleaſing and virtuous converſation might have in time produced ſome change in his extravagant manners. The company of good perſons often excites us to follow their example; but Don Diego's libertine temper was not to be contained within the bounds of ſociety, though he behaved himſelf well enough when he was in it; for, beſides ſome little learning he had, his excellent memory and good ſenſe made his converſation agreeable. However, he only loved to keep company with wild young fellows like himſelf, who had no other employment but ranging the ſtreets at midnight. As ſoon as he returned to Madrid, he ſent to acquaint all his gang, deſiring them to meet at a certain uſual place of rendezvous, to renew their acquaintance, and drink a glaſs together. Eight of this mad gang, who loved to grope out their fortune in the dark, met at the place appointed, where they ſupped together, by way of club, that every man might be at his full liberty, not obliged to one another, and have no occaſion to make any compliment at parting.

When they had performed the ſolemnity of his welcome home, and offered ſacrifice to Bacchus and Comus, the two deities they particularly honoured, they all ſallied out in a body with their guittars, to ſerenade their miſtreſſes, and found a reveillé to ſome, that had rather have devoted their eyes to Morpheus, than their ears to Orpheus. Among theſe was an apothecary, whom they made their ſport, only becauſe they unexpectedly found themſelves by his ſhop, and Don Diego remembered he owed him a good turn. He had lived very near our adventurer when he fell ſick, after the death of Leander, and Sirena's becoming a religious; and becauſe he made uſe of another apothecary, this man, out of envy to his brother tradeſman, or to be revenged on Don Diego, never ceaſed rattling his mortar, and made more noiſe with flouriſhing his peſtle, and chiming on the ſides of the mortar, than with pounding his powders; and the ſhrillneſs of the ſound gave ſufficient cauſe to ſuſpect that there was nothing, or but very little in it; ſo that ſick Don Diego being very much diſturbed with this ringing, ſent ſeveral times to entreat him to make leſs noiſe; but he anſwered, that he might do what he pleaſed in his own houſe, ſince he paid for it; that he muſt work for his living; that if he

wanted a dinner, Don Diego would not give it him; and much more to this purpoſe; ſo that Don Diego was fain to make uſe of all his intereſt, friends, and money, to make him remove from thence, as he did at laſt, becauſe he was but a quarterly tenant, and yet he had not this ſatisfaction till towards the end of his ſickneſs, after he had endured very much by him. So that not thinking himſelf ſufficiently revenged of him for his impertinency, being then accidentally upon the ſpot, he had a fancy to play him a prank.

Our brave adventurer being at this time highly inſpired by the fumes of Bacchus, whence moſt of thoſe wonderful conceits proceed, which we commonly attribute to Apollo, deſired his companions to halt. Then advancing eight or ten paces, he fell a knocking furiouſly at the apothecary's door, who was going to bed, and held the following dialogue with him:

Apothecary. Who is there? Who is it that knocks at my gate ſo late? Sure they are ſome lunatics, or night magiſtrates, for no others durſt do ſo at ſuch an unſeaſonable hour. How now!

Don Diego. Pray, Sir, do me the favour to tell me whereabouts lives a certain apothecary and half-doctor, whoſe name is Maſter Robert?

Apothecary. Maſter Robert? He is certainly

a whole doctor; and as for you, Sir, he lives here, in this very place, and is the same that is talking to you in person; speak what you would have with me, for I have more mind to sleep than to talk.

Don Diego. Sir, I beg your pardon with all my heart. Is it possible you are the very man? Pray, good Sir, let me entreat you, do not deceive me, I am in more haste than you imagine, and I must needs speak with himself. Alas! poor gentleman, he'll die this bout, if he has not help immediately. Pray, good Sir, open the door, for God's sake.

Apothecary. I know you not; I will not open my door at unseasonable hours, but tell me what it is you want; speak in plainer terms, for I do not understand half what you say.

Don Diego. O good Lord! Why must he die then without help? I perceive you have not prepared that medicine the physician said he had prescribed, and left the bill here.

Apothecary. God-a-mercy, thanks to my stars, now I begin to comprehend. Is it for the Neapolitan gentleman, that is troubled with the pain at his stomach?

Don Diego. The very same.

Apothecary. Why, is he in such danger? My servant told me the physician had not ordered

it till Thurſday, which is not till after to-morrow.

Don Diego. For Thurſday! Lord, Sir, what do you talk of? Your man is miſtaken, and the poor gentleman will pay for it, at the expence of his life and health.

Apothecary. My friend, be not impatient, do not fret, I will put on my clothes directly, and aſſure yourſelf the compoſition will be ready in leſs than a quarter of an hour, which will be time enough to eaſe the diſtemper, if God ſo pleaſes.

Don Diego. Make haſte then in the name of God, but not with ſo much precipitation as to miſtake *quid pro quo*; you know the gentleman is a perſon that will requite your trouble. Adieu, Sir; I am going to tell them you are coming after me.

Apothecary. Go, go; no man queſtions my ability, beſides yourſelf; but I pardon your ignorance.

Don Diego making as if he were going home very haſtily, and trampling hard on the ſtones ſo be heard, went off five or ſix paces, and then returning ſoftly, drew near the ſhop, and heard the apothecary calling his man, and ſaying, "Hey boy, where is that laxative potion I made "the day before yeſterday, for the patient that

" died as I was carrying of it; that ſame may " be good for this man, the diſeaſe is almoſt the " ſame, you need only pour it out into a little " mortar, and there make an infuſion of a little " *granus ſimpliciſſimus*, and a dram of *cerebro-* " *ſion*, then *fiat mixtio*, &c. Quick, quick, let " us have done."

Don Diego hearing this diſcourſe, was fain to quit the place for fear of ſpoiling his deſign, for he could no longer forbear burſting out into laughter. He returned to his companions, who had been liſtening to his dialogue, admiring what ſudden fancy it was that took him, without ſpeaking a word to them, to go beat up the apothecary, and banter him; wondering at his readineſs to lay hold of the apothecary's own words to put the trick upon him. Don Diego told them, what orders the apothecary had given his man, about the compoſition of the medicine, and the terms of art he uſed, at which they bleſſed themſelves a thouſand times, and beſtowed as many curſes on him.

To ſee the event of the jeſt, they reſolved to watch his coming out at the corner of the ſtreet, that they might follow him, and know the unfortunate perſon the potion was deſigned for, to be ſacrificed to their frolic. They had not watched above half a quarter of an hour before

they ſaw that executioner come out of his houſe, with the viol of the poiſonous potion in his hand, and a diſh to drink out of, charging his man to take care of the houſe. They followed him cloſe at his heels for a conſiderable way, and ſaw him go into the Neapolitan gentleman's houſe he had ſpoke of, after knocking a long time before they heard him. That gentleman was of a very weakly diſpoſition, above ſixty years of age, and wholly in the hands of the doctors and apothecaries; but though ſickly, he was worſe in conceit than in reality, which was a great trouble to thoſe that had him in cure. He was of a melancholy temper, which had ſo far the predominancy over him, that it led him into ſuperſtition, ſo that he did not ſtick to ſeek eaſe by charms and ſpells. His friends deſiring to divert him from ſo great a crime, prevailed with him to have one more conſultation of two able phyſicians beſides his own, where it was reſolved that he ſhould take a purge three days after, which was on the Thurſday following. The patient was ſo eager to be cured, that he followed all their preſcriptions; and the implicit faith he had in the medicines, hoping in them to find eaſe from his miſery, made him reliſh the moſt loathſome and unſavoury potions, as if they had been nectar

and ambrosia. And being extremely nice in observing all rules prescribed by the physician, and in taking the medicines exactly at the hours appointed, he kept a valet de chambre, in whose care and fidelity he confided, and who had no other business but to take the doctor's bills, and carry them to the apothecary; so that the other servants had nothing to do to concern themselves in it. This man perceiving that the last consultation of physicians gave his master some small respite, and that he was to take nothing in three days, made use of that time to go visit a young maid he was in love with; and it fell out unluckily, that the apothecary brought his choice medicine, just after this nursing-servant was gone abroad; so that the other servants, and the patient himself, believed the physician had thought fit to give him some potion beforehand, to prepare his body for purging, and that the servant had gone to acquaint the apothecary with it. So the courteous Neapolitan, without inquiring any farther, took the cup, and poured down the drench.

All this while our adventurer and his gang were in the street, full of different thoughts. Some laughed at the action, whilst others were much concerned, as foreseeing the ill conse-

quences that might happen; insomuch, that the wisest of them prevailed upon the rest to withdraw, and rest satisfied for that time, referring it to the next day, to inquire after the success of that hellish purge, which vented Don Diego's revenge upon the life of an innocent person. As they went out of the street, they observed their number was not complete, there being but seven left of eight that were at the apothecary's house, which somewhat perplexed them; but one of them, who was better acquainted with the absent party's secrets, told them they need not be concerned, for he was gone to a place where there was no need of a guard.

The reader, for his better information, is to observe that Master Robert, our famous apothecary, had a daughter so beautiful, that she might vie with the most celebrated ladies in Madrid. The knowledge of these favours heaven had bestowed on her, made her so vain and conceited, that she valued herself much above her quality; for though but of mean parentage, yet she had a haughty spirit, and aspired to some great fortune. She scorned the addresses of such as were not above her rank, though they were very rich, and only delighted in being courted by gentlemen, still retaining such an absolute command over her passions, that with-

out wronging her, none of all her admirers could boaſt, that he had gained the leaſt upon her inclination. She maintained herſelf in this freedom a long time; but at laſt Riodan, that companion of Don Diego's, who had ſlipped away from the reſt of the company, being overcome by her perfections, was ſo dexterous, or rather ſo fortunate, that he gained admittance to Dorothy, ſo this beauty was called, by the means of Maſter Robert's maid, whom he had gained, by the preſents he continually made her. The truth is, he was ſo well qualified, ſpeaking after the manner of the world, as might excuſe the amorous frolics a maid might be guilty of for his ſake.

This man being one of the perſons invited to the meeting made to welcome our adventurer, was in complaiſance obliged to go a-walking with them after ſupper, as he did, but with a reſolution to leave that inſipid diverſion, and ſlip away from the company, to repair to that which was much more delightful to him. This was the beautiful Dorothy, whom that maid he ſo bountifully rewarded, had put him in hopes of enjoying that very night; ſo that ſeeing them make towards that quarter of the town, where his buſineſs lay, he followed them with the better will. He was overjoyed when Don Diego

fell upon that frolic againſt his miſtreſs's father, and accordingly gave the greateſt commendations of any in the gang to our adventurer, for his wit and contrivance. In ſhort, it looked as if that whimſy had been put into his head, on purpoſe to favour his good fortune, and the medicine he aſked for ſo earneſtly, deſigned to cool his amorous flame.

He ſeeing the apothecary go abroad, let his companions follow him, and ſtaid behind upon the watch, expecting the ſignal the maid was to give; for to add to his good fortune, the aſſignation made him was juſt at the very time the maſter went out, as if he had contributed towards completing of Riodan's felicity. He was ſcarce got to the corner of the ſtreet, before the confident, by the conſent of the amorous Dorothy, came to the door, and taking Riodan by the hand, led him, as if he had been blind and dumb, into her miſtreſs's chamber, obſerving ſtrict ſilence, for fear of awaking her mother. There Riodan found a candle burning, and Dorothy ſitting at the foot of her bed, half undreſſed. At his firſt coming in, ſhe pretended to be ſurpriſed, fell a railing at her maid, and ſtarting up deſignedly, let fall her night-rail, which covered her breaſt, and ſhowed her lover wonders of beauty, though ſhe pretended to clap

her hands before her, to hide them. Riodan was not so much a stranger to these affairs, but he could see through her artifice, but she did it with so good a grace that it charmed him. He drew near in the most respectful manner, endeavouring to excuse his boldness, and oblige her to grant him some favour; but she acting much coyness and reservedness, desired him to be gone the same way he came, telling him, her honour was too dear to her to part with at so easy a rate, and that whatever he thought of her, he must expect nothing of her but in a lawful way.

Riodan seeming to approve of her virtuous resolution, made her all the most obliging compliments that could be imagined; for he had a ready wit, offering to give her what assurances she could desire of the sincerity of his affection; and if promise of marriage would satisfy, he was ready to make it. Dorothy, being well disposed towards him, and wanting only a good pretence to give way to her inclination, took him at his word, and laid paper before him, to perform what he had said. The maid, at the same time, set a great, heavy, leaden standish on the table, which seemed to prognosticate the heavy burden he was going to lay on his shoulders. He readily took the pen, and with his own hand

writ the ſentence of his condemnation, and being juſt ready to ſign it, he looked upon Dorothy, who ſmiled for joy to ſee him ſo forward; but as he turned his head towards her, he laid his hand on the ſtandiſh, which unluckily fell down on a great braſs mortar, that ſtood by the leg of the table.

This was a ſtab that pierced Dorothy's heart, giving a ſound like the clapper of a great bell, which waked her mother, and made her ſit up in her bed, to obſerve whence it came. Seeing a light in her daughter's chamber, ſhe called to her, and at the ſame time got out of her bed with much difficulty, for ſhe was diſabled with age. Dorothy fearing ſhe ſhould ſee Riodan, was thruſting him out of the room juſt as her mother was coming in, which put the old woman into ſuch a fright, that ſhe dropped down, crying, Help, Help! Her daughter diſturbed at this accident, and fearing her father's return, whom ſhe dreaded more than death, immediately reſolved to quit the houſe, and relying on Riodan's fidelity and diſcretion, to put herſelf into his cuſtody, and run all hazards with him.

The maid, who had carried on the intrigue between them, fled in their company, leaving her miſtreſs on the ground, crying out, till ſhe was hoarſe, for help, which was all ſhe could do.

At length ſhe awaked all the neighbours, and among the reſt, a crony of her huſband's, who was the firſt that came in, repreſenting Adam and Mars, quite naked, with his ſword in one hand, and his target in the other. He ſearched and peeped into all the corners, holes and crannies of the houſe; but all the pains he took, only ſerved to fright the cats, and tear the cobwebs.

Dorothy's father having drenched the Neapolitan gentleman with his curſed potion, came home and found all in confuſion, his wife half dead, and his friends ſtanding about, endeavouring to comfort her. Being told the cauſe of theſe ſtrange alarms, it touched him ſo near, that he ſtood a while as if he had been ſenſeleſs, and void of motion. Let us leave them a while to recover themſelves in the arms of their kindred and friends, and go ſee what was the effect of the extravagant purge, compoſed by the malicious ingenuity of Don Diego, and ſo innocently taken by the poor Neapolitan gentleman.

It happened that the medicine being ſtale, made up of decayed drugs, and adminiſtered before the body was any way prepared for it, beſides that the patient's ſtomach was loaded with the ſupper he had eaten at night, it put the poor gentleman into ſuch anguiſh, as if he

had live-dogs within him, tearing his bowels. He cried out inceſſantly for mercy, and ſometimes added, "O my God, this falſe dog has "murdered me!" He continued all the remaining part of the night in that grievous anguiſh, and about eight in the morning in came his valet de chambre, who was to look to him in his ſickneſs. He found his maſter groaning in a moſt diſmal manner, and all the ſervants condoling him; and inquiring into the cauſe of it, the whole blame was laid at his door, for having ſent the apothecary, who put him into that condition. He ſwore and proteſted he knew not what they ſaid; that certainly this misfortune had happened either through the malice or ignorance of the apothecary, who always condemned the phyſicians, ſaying, they did not preſcribe proper medicines for the patient, and that it was likely he had prepared this medicine of his own head, without the advice of the phyſician; fancying he might work ſome wonder, in hopes of a conſiderable reward. This notion was thought to be well grounded, and whilſt they were diſcourſing of it, in came the phyſician, who often viſited this patient, becauſe he gave better fees than others. They aſked, whether he had given any new preſcription for the ſick man? he anſwered, He had not, felt his

pulſe, and being told what had happened, was in a ſtrange conſternation. He preſently gave the gentleman ſomething to carry off the poiſon he had in his body, and by degrees eaſed him of his pains. This done, he went with the valet de chambre, and acquainted the college of phyſicians with the apothecary's offence, who complained to the magiſtrates, repreſenting to them how much the public was concerned, whereupon they inſtantly iſſued out a warrant for apprehending of the unfortunate apothecary. Let us now go back and ſee what condition he is in.

When the firſt violent pangs of his affliction were over, he began to take heart, and reſolved to uſe the utmoſt means for retrieving of his honour, and revenging the affront he had received. After ſeriouſly reflecting on the whole affair, he concluded that Agrimont had done him this wrong; this was the name of the Neapolitan gentleman's valet de chambre; and that the better to compaſs his deſign, he had ſent him word to make haſte and carry the medicine, to get him out of his houſe; whereas it ought not to have been adminiſtered that day. He called to mind that he had often heard him commend his daughter, declaring he had a great mind to offer her his ſervice; beſides that he was not at his maſter's when he gave him the medicine,

contrary to the duty of his place, and the care he always had at other times, ſo that upon all concurring circumſtances, he could no longer doubt but it was Agrimont who had done him this wrong.

Upon this conceit he went away to a lawyer, to whom he told the whole matter, and what ſtrong preſumptions he had againſt Agrimont, and it being natural for thoſe people to make a mighty crime of a ſmall conjecture, and to conclude thoſe guilty againſt whom there is but a ſlight ſuſpicion; this lawyer repreſented the ſtory ſo lively with his bloody pen, and interſperſed with ſo much ſhow of ſcandal, that upon view of it, the judge iſſued out his warrant for apprehending of the party accuſed, to anſwer the crime laid to his charge. Maſter Robert followed his buſineſs ſo cloſe, and beſtowed his money ſo freely in the purſuit, that before many hours were paſt he had ſerved his warrant. He employed ſeveral officers after Agrimont, and had him ſeized with a great deal of noiſe and diſturbance, though he could not imagine the cauſe of this hard uſage. However, he had his revenge at the ſame time; for the phyſician, who had informed againſt him, took no leſs care to ſee his warrant ſerved, and he knowing as little as Agrimont why he was ſecured, imagined

they took him for another; he made his proteſtations, and threatened to ſue all that were concerned againſt him; but all availed nothing, for he was clapped into gaol. His friends came to ſee him, and told him the cauſe of his confinement, and at whoſe ſuit he was impriſoned, whence he concluded it was only a piece of revenge of the Neapolitan's, to clear his valet de chambre, and get him out of priſon. The poor gliſterpipe broken with ſo many diſaſters in his old age, and having ſuch a powerful adverſary to contend with, was caſt down, and fell into a burning fever, which had like to have turned his brain, as it waſted his body.

In the meanwhile Agrimont finding himſelf accuſed of houſebreaking, and raviſhing a virgin of reputation, was in as fair a way to run mad as his adverſary. His maſter was much concerned at his troubles, which went the nearer to his heart, becauſe he knew not how to live without him. He ſpared no money to get him at liberty, and to puniſh the apothecary at the ſame time. In ſhort, for four days they were in ſtrange confuſion and trouble, during which time, madneſs and death were ſtruggling whether ſhould lay hold of their perſons; but at laſt all theſe riddles were expounded by one of thoſe that were the contrivers of them.

The amorous Paris, raviſher of the beautiful Dorothy, was with her at Toledo, where he had generouſly performed the promiſe he left behind him unſigned, when the unfortunate fall of the ſtandiſh happened; he had given his hand and heart to Dorothy as her huſband; and having notice ſent him by a friend he confided in at Madrid, how many were in trouble upon his account, he writ to Mr. Robert, calling him father-in-law, and gave him an account of the happy ſucceſs of his rape, and how great a value he had for his daughter, whoſe beauty and diſcretion made him love her more than himſelf, and honour her as if ſhe had been a princeſs; and to conclude, that in a very few days he hoped to bring her to his preſence, to beg his pardon, and, at the ſame time, his approbation of what ſhe had done.

The apothecary was ſo overjoyed with this letter, that as the grief for the loſs of his daughter, had like to have been the death of him, ſo was he now in no leſs danger of loſing his life, through exceſs of pleaſure for having found her. He preſently diſcharged Agrimont, ſtopped all proceedings againſt him, offering to pay all coſts and charges, and to make him ſuch amends for his reputation as he ſhould require. This done,

Agrimont came out of priſon; but Mr. Robert ſtill continued to be reſponſible, as a falſe cook, for the dangerous meſs he diſhed the Neapolitan gentleman. Yet, after much examination, his ſimplicity was made to appear, and there having been too many witneſſes to Don Diego's action, he was diſcovered to be the contriver of all that diſorder. Riodan came ſoon to town in the interim, and having been a party concerned in all the offence, made uſe of all his intereſt, and laid out much money to clear his father-in-law, and at the ſame time put a ſtop to the proceedings againſt Don Diego.

He ſoon got off the apothecary, by virtue of a little ointment of Peru, wherewith he greaſed the phyſician that proſecuted him; but he found more difficulty in delivering our adventurer from the hands of juſtice, for it was a hard matter to excuſe him, after ſo many follies and extravagancies as he had been accuſed of, to the diſturbance of ſeveral perſons. So that all the favour he could obtain, through the mediation of powerful interceſſors, and the much greater authority of many double piſtoles beſtowed among the officers, was to confine him to be at home at ſeven o'clock in winter, and at eight in ſummer, with a ſtrict prohibition not to go abroad

before day, under pain of being looked upon and punished as a night-walker, common felon, and disturber of the public peace.

Thus our adventurer was compelled to endeavour to grow wiser, and to obey this decree for fear of farther shame; and this order being yet but of a fresh date, he hitherto observes it exactly; but it is to be feared he will not be long kept within bounds, but that he will be led away by his natural inclination, and inveterate ill habits, which may perhaps afford matter for a second volume of his life and wonderful exploits.

THE

PLEASANT HISTORY

OF THE

LIFE AND ACTIONS

OF

PAUL

THE SPANISH SHARPER,

The Pattern of Rogues, and Mirror of Vagabonds.

BOOK I.

CHAP I.

Giving an Account of his Birth and Country.

I was born at Segovia, my father's name was Clement Paul, a native of the ſame town; I hope his ſoul is in heaven. I need not ſpeak of his virtues, for thoſe are unknown, but by trade he was a barber, though ſo high minded, that he took it for an affront to be called by any name but that of a hair-cutter. They ſay he came of a good ſtock, and his actions ſhowed it.

He was married to Aldonza Saturna de Rebillo, daughter to Octavio de Rebillo Codillo, and grandchild to Lepido Ziuracontt. The town foully ſuſpected that ſhe was of a Jewiſh race, though ſhe ſtrongly urged the names of her progenitors, to prove herſelf deſcended from thoſe great men that formed the triumvirate at Rome. She was very handſome, and ſo famous, that all the ballad rhymers of her time made verſes of her, which were ſung about the ſtreets. She run through many troubles, when firſt married, and long after, for there were ſcandalous tongues in the neighbourhood that did not ſtick to ſay my father was willing to wear the horns, provided they were tipped with gold. It was proved upon him, that whilſt he was lathering the beards of thoſe he was to trim, a ſmall brother of mine, about ſeven years of age, rifled their pockets. The poor child died of a whipping he had in the gaol; and my father was much concerned at the loſs, becauſe he was ſuch a hopeful forward boy. He was himſelf a while in priſon for ſome ſmall trifles of this nature; but I am told he came off ſo honourably, that at his firſt walking abroad one went behind flapping the flies off his back; all the mob of the town followed, huzzaing and ſaluting him with turnip-tops and rotten oranges,

and the ladies ſtood at their windows to ſee him paſs by; for my father always made a good figure, either a-foot or a-horſeback. I no not ſpeak it out of vanity, for every body knows I am not guilty of it.

My mother, good woman, had her ſhare of troubles. An old woman that bred me, commending her one day, ſaid, ſhe was of ſuch a taking behaviour, that ſhe bewitched all ſhe had to do with; but they ſay, ſhe talked ſomething concerning her being too familiar with a great he-goat, which had like to have brought her to the ſtake, to try whether ſhe had any thing of the nature of the ſalamander, and could live in fire. It was reported that ſhe had an excellent hand at ſoldering cracked maidenheads, and diſguiſing of grey hairs. Some gave her the name of a pleaſure-broker, others of a reconciler; but the ruder ſort, in coarſe language, called her downright bawd, and univerſal money-catcher. It would make any body in love with her ſo ſee with what a pleaſant countenance ſhe took this from all perſons. I ſhall not ſpend much time in relating what a penitential life ſhe led; but ſhe had a room, into which nobody went beſides herſelf, and ſometimes I was admitted on account of my tender years; it was all beſet with dead men's

ſkulls, which ſhe ſaid were to put her in mind of mortality, though others in ſpite to her pretended they were to put tricks upon the living. Her bed was corded with halters malefactors had been hanged in; and ſhe uſed to ſay to me, D'ye ſee theſe things? I ſhow them as remembrances to thoſe I have a kindneſs for, that they may take heed how they live, and avoid coming to ſuch an end.

My parents had much bickering about me, each of them contending to have me brought up to their trade; but I, who from my infancy had more gentleman-like thoughts, applied myſelf to neither. My father uſed to ſay to me, "My child, this trade of ſtealing is no mecha-"nic trade, but a liberal art." Then pauſing and fetching a ſigh, he went on, "There is no "living in this world without ſtealing. Why "do you think the conſtables and other officers "hate us as they do? why do they ſometimes "baniſh, ſometimes whip us at the cart's tail, "and at laſt hang us up like flitches of bacon?" (I cannot refrain from tears when I think of it, for the good old man wept like a child, remembering how often they had flogged him.) "The "reaſon is, becauſe they would have no other "thieves among them but themſelves and their "gang; but a ſharp wit brings us out of all

" dangers. In my younger days I plied alto-
" gether in the churches, not out of any religi-
" ous zeal, and had been long ago carted, but
" that I never told tales, though they put me
" to the rack; for I never confeſſed but when
" our holy mother the church commands us.
" With this buſineſs, and my trade, I have made
" a ſhift to maintain your mother as decently as
" I could." " You maintain me!" anſwered my mother, in a great rage (for ſhe was vexed I could not learn to be a wizzard), " it was I that
" maintained you; I brought you out of priſon
" by my art, and kept you there with my mo-
" ney. You may thank the potions I gave
" you for not confeſſing, and not your own
" courage. My good pots did the feat; and
" were it not for fear I ſhould be heard in the
" ſtreets, I would tell all the ſtory, how I got in
" at the chimney, and brought you out at the
" top of the houſe." Her paſſion was ſo high, that ſhe would not have given over here, had not the ſtring of a pair of beads broke, which were all dead men's teeth ſhe kept for private uſes. I told them very poſitively I would apply myſelf to virtue, and go on in the good way I had propoſed, and therefore deſired them to put me to ſchool, for nothing was to be done without reading and writing. They approved

of what I ſaid, though they both muttered at it a while betwixt them. My mother fell to ſtringing her dead men's teeth, and my father went away, as he ſaid, to trim one, I know not whether he meant his beard or his purſe. I was left alone, praiſing God that he had given me ſuch ingenious parents, and ſo zealous for my advancement.

CHAP. II.

How I went to School, and what happened to me there.

The next day my primmer was bought, and my ſchoolmaſter beſpoke; I went to ſchool, and he received me with a pleaſant countenance, telling me I had the looks of a ſharp lad, and witty. That he might not ſeem to be miſtaken in his judgment, I took care to learn my leſſon well that morning. My maſter made me ſit next to him, and appointed me a monitor every day, becauſe I came firſt, and went away laſt, ſtaying behind to run on ſome errands for my miſtreſs, and thus I gained all their affections. They favoured me ſo much, that all the other boys were envious. I made it my buſineſs to keep company with gentlemen's ſons,

above all others, but particularly with a ſon of Don Alonſo Coronel de Zunniga: I uſed to eat my afternoon's luncheon with him, went to his houſe every holiday, and waited on him upon other days. The other boys, either becauſe I took no notice of them, or that they thought I aimed too high, were continually giving of me nicknames relating to my father's trade. Some called me Mr. Scrape, others Mr. Tickle-Beard. One to excuſe his envy would ſay he hated me, becauſe my mother had ſuckled two little ſiſters of his in the night; another, that my father had been ſent for to his houſe to frighten away the vermine, for nothing was ſafe where he came. Some, as I paſſed by, cried out, Cat; others, Puſs, Puſs, to ſignify my clawing deſcent. Another would ſay, I threw rotten oranges at his mother when ſhe was carted. Yet for all their backbiting, I praiſe God my ſhoulders were broad enough to bear it; and though I was out of countenance, yet I took no notice, but put all up, till one day a boy had the impudence to call me, ſon of a whore and a witch; he ſpoke it ſo plain, that though I had been glad it had been better wrapped up, I took up a ſtone, and broke his head. Away I went, running as faſt as I could to my mother to hide me, telling her all the

ſtory. She ſaid, "It was very well done of "you, and like yourſelf; but you were in the "wrong that you did not aſk him who told "him ſo." Hearing what ſhe ſaid, and having always had aſpiring thoughts, I turned to her, and ſaid, "Mother, all that troubles me is, that "ſome of the ſtanders by told me I had no cauſe "to be diſturbed at it; and I did not aſk them "what they meant, becauſe he was ſo young "that ſaid it." I prayed her to tell me, whether I could have given him the lie with a ſafe conſcience, or whether I was begot in a huddle, by a great many, or was the true ſon of my father. She ſmiled, and anſwered, "God a-"mercy, lad! are you ſo cunning already, "you'll be no fool, you have ſenſe enough; "you did very well in breaking his head, for "ſuch things are not to be ſaid, though never "ſo true." This ſtruck me to the heart, and I was ſo very much out of countenance, that I reſolved, as ſoon as poſſible, to lay hold of all I could, and leave my father's houſe. However, I diſſembled; my father went and cured the boy, all was made up, and I went to ſchool again. My maſter received me in an angry manner, till being told the occaſion of the quarrel, his paſſion was aſſuaged, conſidering the provocation given me. Don Alonſo de

Zunniga's ſon and I were very great all this while, becauſe he had a natural affection for me; and beſides, I uſed to change tops and gigs with him, if mine were better than his; I gave him any thing I had to eat, and never aſked for what he had; I bought him pictures, I taught him to wreſtle, played at leap frog with him, and was ſo obliging in all reſpects, that the young gentleman's parents obſerving how fond he was of my company, would ſend for me almoſt every day to dine and ſup, and ſometimes to ſtay all night with him.

It happened one day about Chriſtmas, as we were going to ſchool, that a counſellor, called Pontio de Auguirre, paſſed by; little Don Diego ſeeing him, bid me call him Pontius Pilate, and run away when I had done. To pleaſe my friend, I did ſo, and the man was ſo affronted at it, that he ſcoured after me as hard as he could, with a knife in his hand to ſtab me, ſo that I was forced to take ſanctuary in my maſter's houſe, crying out with might and main. The man was in as ſoon as I; my maſter ſaved me from his doing me any miſchief, promiſing to whip me, and was as good as his word, though my miſtreſs, in conſideration of the great ſervice I did her, interceded for me. He bid me untruſs, and every laſh he gave me cried, "Will

" you ever call Pontius Pilate again?" I answered, " No, Sir," every time he put the question; and it was such a warning to me, that dreading the name of Pontius Pilate, the next day, when we were ordered to say our prayers, according to custom, coming to the belief (pray observe the innocent cunning) instead of saying he suffered under Pontius Pilate, believing I was never more to name Pilate, I said, He suffered under Pontio de Auguirre. My master burst out a laughing at my simplicity, and to see how I dreaded the lashing; and embracing me, promised to forgive the two first whippings I should deserve; which I took as a great favour of fortune, and kindness in him.

To be brief, twelfthtide came, and our master, to divert the boys, and make sport, ordered that there should be a king among us, and we cast lots for that honour among twelve he had appointed for it. I was the lucky person it fell upon, and spoke to my father and mother to provide me fine clothes. When the day came, abroad I went upon a starved poor jade of a horse, that fell down upon his knees at every step, his back looked like a saw, his neck like a camel's, but somewhat longer; his head like a pig, only it had but one eye, and that moon-blind; all this plainly showed the knavery of

his keeper, who made him do penance, and faſt, cheating him of his provender. Thus I went, ſwinging from ſide to ſide, like a jointed baby, with all the reſt of the boys after me, tricked up as fine as ſo many puppets, till we came into the market-place, the very naming of it ſcares me; and coming to the herb women's ſtalls, the Lord deliver us from them, my horſe being half ſtarved, ſnapped up a ſmall cabbage, which no ſooner touched his teeth, but it was down his throat, though, by reaſon of the length of his neck, it came not into his belly in a long time after. The herb-woman, like the reſt of them, was an impudent jade, ſet up the cry, the others of the trade flocked about her, and among them abundance of the ſcoundrels of the market; all theſe fell a pelting the poor king with carrot and turnip tops, rotten oranges, and all the offals of the market. Conſidering the enemies forces were all foot, and therefore I ought not to charge them a-horſeback, I would have alighted; but my horſe received ſuch a ſhot in the head, that as he went to rear, his ſtrength failing him, we both came down into the kennel. You may imagine what a condition I was in. By this time my ſubjects, the boys, had armed themſelves with ſtones, and charging the herb-women, broke two of their heads. For my part,

after my fall into the kennel, I was good for little, unleſs it were to drive all from me with ſtink and naſtineſs. The officers coming up, ſeized two of the herb-women and ſome of the boys, ſearching them for their weapons, which they took away, for ſome had drawn daggers they wore for the greater ſhow, and ſhort ſwords. They came to me, and ſeeing no weapon about me, becauſe I had taken them off, and put them into a houſe to be cleaned, with my hat and cloak, one of them aſked me for my arms; I anſwered, that in that filthy condition, I had none but what were offenſive to the noſe alone. I cannot but acquaint you, good reader, by the by, that when they began to pelt me with the rotten oranges, turnip-tops, &c. my hat being ſtuck with feathers, as they do the bawds in Spain when they cart them, I fancied they miſtook me for my mother, and thought they threw at her, as they had done ſeveral times before. This fooliſh notion being got into my young head, I began to cry out, "Good women, "though I wear feathers in my cap, I am none "of Aldonza Saturno de Rebillo, ſhe is my "mother;" as if they could not perceive that by my ſhape and face: However, the fright I was in may excuſe my ignorance, eſpecially conſidering the misfortune came ſo ſuddenly upon

me. To return to the officer; he would willingly have carried me to priſon, but did not, becauſe he could not find a clean place to lay hold of me, for I was all over mire. Some went one way, and ſome another, and I went directly home from the market place, giving all I met by the way a moſt helliſh perfume. As ſoon as I got home I told my father and mother all the ſtory, who were in ſuch a paſſion to ſee me in that naſty pickle, that they would have beat me. I excuſed myſelf the beſt I could, laying all the blame on the ſkeleton jade they had provided for me to ride; and finding nothing would appeaſe them, left the houſe, and went away to ſee my friend Don Diego, whom I found at home with a broken head, and his parents fully reſolved, for this reaſon, that he ſhould go to ſchool no more. There was I informed, that my ſteed, finding himſelf in diſtreſs, ſummoned up all the ſtrength he had to ſalute his enemies with his heels, but was ſo weak, that he put out his hips with the effort, and lay in the dirt expiring. Conſidering that all the ſport was ſpoiled, the mob alarmed, my parents in a rage, my friend's head broken, and my horſe dead, I reſolved to go no more to ſchool, nor to my father's houſe, but to ſtay and wait upon Don Diego, or rather to bear him company, which

his parents were well pleaſed with, becauſe their ſon was ſo taken with me. I wrote to my father and mother, telling them, I had no need to go to ſchool any longer, for though I could not write a good hand, that was no fault, becauſe it was more becoming me, who deſigned to be a gentleman, to write an ill one; and therefore, from that time, I renounced the ſchool, to ſave them charges, and their houſe, that they might have no trouble with me. I acquainted them where, and what poſt I was in, and that I ſhould ſee them no more, till they gave me leave.

CHAP. III.

How I went to a Boarding-School, to wait upon Don Diego Coronel.

Don Alonso reſolved to ſend his ſon to a boarding-ſchool; both to wean him from his tender keeping at home, and at the ſame time to eaſe himſelf of that care. He was informed there was a maſter of arts in Segovia, whoſe name was Cabra, that made it his buſineſs to breed up gentlemen's ſons; thither he ſent his, and me to wait on him. The firſt Sunday after Lent we were brought into the houſe of famine, for

it is impoſſible to expreſs the penury of the place. The maſter was a ſkeleton, a mere ſhotten herring, or like a long ſlender cane, with a little head upon it, and red haired; ſo that there needs no more to be ſaid to ſuch as know the proverb, "That neither cat nor dog of that "colour are good." His eyes almoſt ſunk into his head, as if he had looked through a perſpective glaſs, or the deep windows in a linen-draper's ſhop; his noſe turning up, and ſomewhat flat, for the bridge was almoſt carried away with an inundation of a cold rheum, for he never had the pox, becauſe it coſts money; his beard had loſt its colour for fear of his mouth, which being ſo near, ſeemed to threaten to eat it for mere hunger; his teeth had many of them forſaken him for want of employment, or elſe were baniſhed for being idle livers; his neck as long as a crane's, with the gullet ſticking out ſo far, as if it had been compelled by neceſſity to ſtart out for ſuſtenance; his arms withered; his hands like a bundle of twigs, each of them, taken downwards, looking like a fork or a pair of compaſſes; with long ſlender legs. He walked leiſurely, and whenſoever he happened to move any thing faſter, his bones rattled like a pair of ſnappers. His voice was weak and hollow; his beard buſhy and long, for he never

trimmed to ſave charges, though he pretended it was ſo odious to him to feel the barber's hands all over his face, that he could rather die than endure it. One of the boys cut his hair. In fair weather he wore a thread-bare cap, an inch thick in greaſe and dirt, made of a thing that was once cloth, and lined in ſcurf and dandruff. His caſſock, ſome ſaid, was miraculous, for no man knew what colour it was of; ſome ſeeing no ſign of hair on it, concluded it was made of frogs ſkins; others ſaid it was a mere ſhadow, or a phantom; near at hand it looked ſomewhat black, and at a diſtance bluiſh. He wore no girdle, cuffs nor band; ſo that his long hair and ſcanty ſhort caſſock made him look like the meſſenger of death. Each ſhoe might have ſerved for an ordinary coffin. As for his chamber, there was not ſo much as a cobweb in it, the ſpiders being all ſtarved to death. He put ſpells upon the mice, for fear they ſhould gnaw ſome ſcraps of bread he kept. His bed was on the floor, and he always lay upon one ſide, for fear of wearing out the ſheets; in ſhort, he was the ſuperlative degree of avarice, and the very *ne plus* of want. Into this prodigy's hands I fell, and lived under him with Don Diego. The night we came, he ſhowed us our room, and made us a ſhort ſpeech, which was no longer,

out of mere good husbandry. He told us how we were to behave ourselves, and the next morning we were employed till dinner time; thither we went, the masters dined first, and the servants waited. The dining-room was as big as a half peck, five gentlemen eat in it at one table: I looked about for the cat, and seeing none, asked a servant, who was an old stander, and in his leanness bore the mark of the boarding-school, how it came they had none? The tears stood in his eyes, and he said, "What do "you talk of cats? Pray who told you that "cats loved penance and mortification? Your "fat sides show you are a new comer." This, to me, was the beginning of sorrow, but I was worse scared, when I observed that all those who were before us in the house, looked like so many pictures of death. Master Cabra said grace, and sat down, and they eat a meal, which had neither beginning nor end. They brought the broth in wooden dishes, but it was so clear, that a man might have seen to the bottom had it been ten fathom to it. I observed how eagerly they all dived down after a poor single pea that was in every dish. Every sip he gave, Cabra cried, "By my troth there is no dainty like the "olla, or boiled meat and broth. Let the world "say what it will, all the rest is mere gluttony

" and extravagancy." As ſoon as the words were out of his mouth, he farted out all the porrenger of broth, ſaying, " This is good for " the health, and ſharpens the wit." A curſe on thee and thy wit, thought I, and at the ſame time ſaw a ſervant like a walking ghoſt, and no more ſubſtantial, bring in a diſh of meat, which looked as if he had picked it off his bones. Among it was one poor ſtray turnip, at whoſe ſight the maſter ſaid, " What, have we turnips to- " day, no partridge is, in my opinion, to com- " pare to them. Eat heartily for I love to ſee " you eat." He gave every one ſuch a wretched bit of mutton, that I believe it all ſtuck to their nails, and between their teeth, ſo that no part of it ever went into their bellies. Cabra looked on, and ſaid, " Eat heartily, for it is a " pleaſure to me, to ſee what good ſtomachs you " have." Pray do but think what a comfort this was for them, that were pining with hunger. When dinner was over, there remained ſome ſcraps of bread on the table, and a few bits of ſkin and bones in the diſh, and the maſter ſaid, " Let this be left for the ſervants; they muſt " dine too; it is not for us to gormandize all." A vengeance on thee, and may what thou haſt eaten choke thee, thou wretched miſer, thought I; what a conſternation have you put my guts

into. He gave thanks, and ſaid, " Now let us " give way to the ſervants, and do you go uſe " ſome exerciſe until two of the clock, leſt your " dinner do you harm." I could no longer forbear laughing for my life, but burſt out into a loud fit. He was very angry, and bid me learn to behave myſelf modeſtly, ripping up two or three old mouldy ſentences, and ſo went his way. We ſat down, and I ſeeing ſuch ſhort commons, and hearing my guns roar for provender, being cunning and ſtronger than the reſt, clapped both hands in the diſh, as others did, and whipped down two ſcraps of bread out of three there were leſt, and one ſkin. The others began to mutter, and making a noiſe, in came Cabra, ſaying, " Eat lovingly together like brethren, " ſince God provides for you, do not fall out, " for there is enough for you all." This ſaid, he returned to ſun himſelf, and left us to ourſelves. I declare it, there was one of theſe ſervants, his name Surre, a Biſcayner, who had ſo abſolutely forgot the way and method of eating, that he put a ſmall bit of cruſt, which fell to his ſhare, to his eyes twice, and knew not the third time how to carry it to his mouth. I aſked for drink; the reſt, who had ſcarce broke their faſt, never thinking of it, and they gave me a diſh with ſome water, which I had no ſooner laid to

my lips, but the ſharp-gutted lad I ſpoke of, ſnatched it away, as if I had been Tantalus, and that the flitting river he ſtands in up to the chin. I got up from the table in moſt ſorrowful manner, perceiving I was in a houſe, where they drank to the guts, but would not permit them to pledge. I had occaſion to untruſs, though I had not dined, and aſked an old ſtander, for the neceſſary houſe; he anſwered he knew not where any was, "There is no ſuch thing," ſaid he, "in this houſe, you may eaſe yourſelf any-"where this one time, for you will never have "occaſion again as long as you ſtay. I have "been here two months, and never did any "ſuch thing, after the firſt day, when I parted "with the ſupper I had eaten at home." It is impoſſible to expreſs my trouble and concern; and conſidering how little was like to go into my belly, I durſt not, though hard preſſed, let go what was there already.

Thus we paſſed on till night. Don Diego aſked me how he ſhould do to perſuade his guts that they had dined, for they would not believe it. That houſe was an hoſpital of dizzy heads, proceeding from empty ſtomachs, as others are of ſurfeits. Supper-time came, for afternoon-ings were never heard of there; it was much ſhorter than the dinner, and not mutton, but a

little roaſted goat, ſure the devil could never have contrived worſe. Our ſtarveling Maſter Cabra ſaid, "It is very wholeſome and benefi-"cial to eat light ſuppers, that the ſtomach may "not be overburdened;" and then he quoted ſome curſed phyſician, that was long ſince in hell. He extolled ſpare diet, alleging that it prevented uneaſy dreams, though he knew that in his houſe it was impoſſible to dream of any thing but eating. Our maſters and we ſupped, but in reality none of us ſupped. We went to bed, and neither Don Diego nor I could ſleep one wink all that night, for he lay contriving how to complain to his father, that he might remove him, and I adviſing him ſo to do; and at laſt I ſaid to him, "Pray, Sir, are you ſure "we are alive, for, to tell you the truth, I have "a ſtrong fancy that we were ſlain in the battle "with the herb-women, and are now ſouls ſuf-"fering in purgatory, in which caſe it will be "to no purpoſe to talk of your father's fetching "us away, without he has our ſouls prayed out "of this place of puniſhment." Having ſpent the whole night in this diſcourſe, we got a little nap towards morning, till it was time to riſe; ſix o'clock ſtruck, Cabra called, and we all went to ſchool; but when I went to dreſs me, my doublet was two handfuls too big; and my

breeches, which before were cloſe, now hung ſo looſe as if they had been none of my own. My very teeth were already all furred, and looked as yellow as amber; ſuch a wonderful change had one day wrought. When we came to ſchool, I was ordered to decline ſome nouns, and was ſo wonderful hungry, that I eat half my words, for want of more ſubſtantial diet. Any man will eaſily believe this, who does but hear what Cabra's man told me, which was, that at his firſt coming he ſaw two great Flanders geldings brought into the houſe, and two days after they went out perfect racers, ſo light, that the very wind would carry them away; that he ſaw maſtiff dogs come in, and in leſs than three hours they went out converted into greyhounds: That one Lent, he ſaw abundance of men, ſome thruſting their heads, ſome their feet, and ſome their whole body, into the porch; and this continued a long time, very many people flocking from all parts to do ſo; and that he aſking one day, what could be the meaning of it, Cabra was very angry, but one in the crowd anſwered, Some of thoſe people are troubled with chilblains, others with the itch, and others with lice, all which diſtempers and vermine died as ſoon as they came into that houſe, ſo that they never felt them more. He aſſured me this was very

true, and I, who was acquainted with the houſe, believe it, which I am fain to take notice of, leſt what I ſay ſhould be looked upon as an hyperbole.

To return to the ſchool, he ſet us our leſſon, and we conned it, and ſo we went on in the ſame courſe of life I have here delivered, only that our maſter added bacon in the boiling of his pot, becauſe going abroad one day, he was told, that, to boil meat without bacon, betokened a ſcandalous race deſcended either from Moors or Jews. For this reaſon he provided a ſmall tin caſe, all full of holes, like a nutmeg-grater, which he opened, and put in a bit of bacon that filled it; then ſhutting the box cloſe, hung it with a ſtring in the pot, that ſome reliſh of it might come through the holes, and the bacon remain for the next day. Afterwards he thought this too great an expence, and therefore for the future only dipped the bacon into the pot. It is eaſy to gueſs what a life we led with this ſort of diet and uſage. Don Diego and I were in ſuch a miſerable condition, that ſince we could find no relief as to eating, after a month was expired, we contrived, at laſt, not to riſe ſo early in the morning, and therefore reſolved to pretend we were ſick, but not feveriſh, becauſe that cheat we thought would be

eaſily diſcovered. The head or toothach were inconſiderable diſtempers; at laſt we ſaid we had the gripes, and were ſick for want of going to ſtool in three days, believing, that rather than be at a penny charges, our maſter would apply no remedy. The devil ordered worſe than we expected, for Cabra had an old receipt, which deſcended to him by inheritance from his father, who was an apothecary. As ſoon as he was told our diſtemper, he prepared a clyſter, and ſending for an old aunt of his, threeſcore and ten years of age, that ſerved him for a nurſe upon occaſion, ordered her to give each of us a potion backwards. She began with Don Diego; the poor wretch ſhrunk up, and the old jade being blind, and her hands ſhaking, inſtead of giving him it inwardly, let it fly betwixt his ſhirt and his back up to his very poll; ſo that became an outward ornament, which ſhould have ſerved for a lining within. The young man cried out; in came Cabra, and ſeeing what had happened, ordered I ſhould be ſerved next, and they would come again to Don Diego. I was dreſſing myſelf very haſtily; but all would not do, for Cabra and others held me, whilſt the old woman gave it me; but I, to requite her kindneſs, returned it all into her face. Cabra was in a rage with me, and ſaid he would

turn me out of his houſe, for he plainly ſaw it was all a cheat; but I was not ſo fortunate. We complained to Don Alonſo, and Cabra made him believe we did it out of idleneſs, becauſe we would not mind our book. Thus all our hopes and entreaties came to nothing; our maſter took the old woman into the houſe, to dreſs the meat, and look after the boarders, turning away his man, becauſe he ſpied ſome crumbs of bread on his coat upon a Friday morning. Only God knows how we were plagued with the old woman. She was ſo deaf, that ſhe heard nothing, but underſtood by ſigns, though ſhe was half blind; and ſuch an everlaſting prayer, that one day the ſtring of her beads broke over the pot as it was boiling, and our broth came to table ſanctified. Some ſaid theſe are certainly black Ethiopian peaſe; others cried they were in mourning, and wondered what relation of theirs was dead. Our maſter happened to bite one of them, and it pleaſed God he broke his teeth.

On Fridays the old woman would dreſs us ſome eggs, but ſo full of her reverend grey hairs, that they appeared no leſs aged than herſelf. It was a common practice with her to dip the fire-ſhovel into the pot inſtead of the ladle, and to ſerve up porrengers of broth ſtuffed with coals,

vermine, chips, and the hurds of flax ſhe uſed to ſpin, all which ſhe threw in to fill up and cram the guts. In this miſery we continued till the next Lent, at the beginning of which one of our companions fell ſick. Cabra, to ſave charges, delayed ſending for a phyſician, till the patient was juſt giving up the ghoſt, and deſired to prepare for another world; then he called a young quack, who felt his pulſe, and ſaid, Hunger had been beforehand with him, and prevented his killing that man. Theſe were his laſt words; the poor lad died, and was buried meanly, becauſe he was a ſtranger. This ſtruck a terror into all that lived in the houſe; the diſmal ſtory flew all about the town, and came at laſt to Don Alonſo Coronel's ears, who having no other ſon, began to be convinced of Cabra's inhumanity, and to give more credit to the words of two mere ſhadows, for we were no better at that time. He came to take us from the boarding-ſchool, and aſked for us, though we ſtood before him; ſo that finding us in ſuch a deplorable condition, he gave our pinch-gut maſter ſome hard words. We were carried away in two chairs, taking leave of our famiſhed companions, who followed us, as far as they could, with their eyes and wiſhes, lamenting and bewailing, as thoſe do who remain ſlaves at

Algiers, when their other aſſociates are ranſomed.

CHAP. IV.

Don Diego and his Man reſcued from the Jaws of Famine, and recovered, are ſent to the Univerſity of Alcala; their pleaſant Adventure by the way.

WHEN we came to Don Alonſo's houſe, they laid us very gently into two beds, for fear of rattling our bones, they were ſo bare with ſtarving; then with magnifying glaſſes, they began to ſearch all about our faces for our eyes, and were a long time before they could find out mine, becauſe I had ſuffered moſt, being treated like a ſervant, and conſequently mine was ſuperlative hunger. Phyſicians were called, who ordered the duſt ſhould be wiped off our mouths with fox-tails, as if we had been paintings; and indeed we looked like the picture of death; and that we ſhould be nouriſhed with good broths and light meats, for fear of overloading our weak ſtomachs. Who can be able to expreſs the rejoicing there was in our guts, the firſt good ſoup that we taſted, and afterwards when we came to eat ſome fowl? All

theſe things to them were unknown novelties. The doctors gave order, that for nine days nobody ſhould talk in our chamber, becauſe our ſtomachs were ſo empty, that the leaſt word returned an echo in them. Theſe and ſuch like precautions uſed, cauſed our ſpirits to return to us in ſome meaſure; but our jaws were ſo tanned and ſhrivelled up, that there was no ſtretching of them, and therefore care was taken that they ſhould be every day gently forced out, and, as it were, ſet upon the laſt with the bottom of a peſtle. In a few days we got up to try our limbs, but ſtill we looked like the ſhadows of other men, and ſo lean and pale, as if we were lineally deſcended from the fathers in the deſert. We ſpent the whole day in praiſing God for having delivered us out of the clutches of the moſt inhumane Cabra, and offered up our earneſt prayers, that no Chriſtian might ever fall into that miſerable thraldom. If ever, when we were eating, we happened to think of the miſerable boarding-ſchool table, it made us ſo hungry, that we devoured twice as much as at any other time. We uſed to tell Don Alonſo, how, when Cabra ſat down to table, he would inveigh againſt gluttony, though he never knew any thing of it in his life; and he laughed heartily, when we informed him, that, in ſpeaking

of the commandment "Thou ſhalt not kill," he made it extend to partridges and capons, and ſuch other dainties as never came within his doors, and even to killing of hunger, which he certainly counted a heinous ſin, and therefore had an averſion againſt all eating. We were three whole months upon our recovery, and at the end thereof Don Alonſo began to think of ſending his ſon to Alcala, to finiſh his Humanity. He aſked me whether I would go, and I thinking I could never be far enough from that inhumane monſter of miſery and famine, offered to ſerve his ſon faithfully, as experience ſhould ſhow. He provided him another ſervant, in the nature of a ſteward, to look to him, and give an account of the money he ſent for his expences, by bill upon one Julian Merluzza. We put all our equipage into a cart belonging to one Diego Monge; it conſiſted of a ſmall bed for our maſter, and a truckle bed to run under it, for me and the ſteward, whoſe name was Aranda, five quilts, four pair of ſheets, eight pillows, four hangings, a trunk of linen, and other furniture for a houſe. We went ourſelves into a coach in the evening, a little before nightfall, and about midnight came to the ever accurſed lone inn of Viveros. The innkeeper was of Mooriſh race, and a downright

thief; and all my life I never ſaw cat and dog ſo peaceable as that day. He received us very lovingly, becauſe he and the carters went ſnacks, for we travelled ſo ſlowly, that they were there before us. He came to the coach-ſide, gave me his hand to alight, and aſked me, "Whether I was going to the univerſity?" I told him I was. He put me into the houſe, where two ſharpers were with ſome wenches, a curate praying by them, an old covetous ſhopkeeper endeavouring to ſpare his ſupper, and two ſcoundrel ſhabby ſcholars, contriving how to fill their bellies free coſt. My maſter, as being the laſt comer, and but a boy, ſaid, "Landlord, get "what you have in the houſe for me and two "ſervants." "We are all your ſervants, Sir," ſaid the ſharpers, "and will wait on you. Here, "landlord, take notice, this gentleman will ſa-"tisfy; fetch out all you have in the larder." This ſaid, one of them ſtepped up to Don Diego, and taking off his cloak, laid it by, ſaying, "Pray, Sir, ſit down and reſt you." This puffed me up ſo full of vanity, that the inn was too little to hold me. One of the damſels ſaid, "What a curious ſhaped gentleman it is; is he "going to his ſtudies? Are you his ſervant, "Sir?" I fancying that every word they ſaid was ſincere, anſwered, "That I and the other

" were both his ſervants." They aſked me his name, and it was ſcarce out of my mouth, before one of the ſcholars went up to him, with tears in his eyes, and embracing him, as if he had been his brother, ſaid, " O my dear Don " Diego, who would have thought, ten years " ago, to have ſeen you thus: Unhappy man, " I am in ſuch a condition that you will not " know me." My maſter and I were both amazed, and ſwore we had never ſeen him in our days. The ſcholar's companion ſtared Don Diego in the face, and ſaid to his friend, " Is " this the gentleman of whoſe father you told " me ſo many ſtories; it is extraordinary fortu- " nate that we have met him, and know him; " he is grown very tall; God bleſs him." With this he began to bleſs himſelf, and ſeemed ſo overjoyed, that any man would have thought we had been brought up together. Don Diego made him many compliments; and as he was aſking him his name, out came the innkeeper, and laid the cloth; and underſtanding the banter, ſaid, " Let that alone, and talk of it after " ſupper, for the meat will be cold." One of the ſharpers ſtepped up, and ſet ſtools for every body, and an arm-chair for Don Diego; the other of them brought in a diſh. The ſcholars ſaid, " Do you ſup, Sir, and whilſt they dreſs

" what the houſe affords for us, we will wait " on you at table." " God forbid," anſwered Don Diego, " pray, gentlemen, ſit down if you " pleaſe." The ſharpers, though he did not ſpeak to them, readily anſwered, " Preſently, " good Sir; all is not ready yet." When I ſaw ſome invited, and the others invite themſelves, my heart was in my mouth, and I dreaded what came to paſs; for the ſcholars laying hold of the ſalad, which was a good diſhful, and looking upon my maſter, ſaid, " It would be unrea- " ſonable that theſe ladies ſhould be left ſupper- " leſs, where a gentleman of ſuch quality is; " pray, Sir, give them leave to take a bit." My maſter, like a true cully, invited them to partake. They ſat down, and between the ſcholars and them there was but one ſingle lettuce of all the ſalad left in a trice, which laſt bit Don Diego had; and as the damned ſtudent gave it him, he ſaid, " Sir, you had a " grandfather, who was my father's uncle, that " ſwooned at the ſight of a lettuce, he was a " man of ſuch an odd diſpoſition." This ſaid, he tumbled down a brick of bread, and his companion did the like. The damſels had made a great hole in a good loaf; but yet the poor curate eat more than all of them with his eyes and wiſhes, the ſharper bringing in a whole ſide of

kid roaſted, and a diſh of pigeons and bacon boiled, took their places at the table, ſaying to the prieſt, "Why father, what makes you ſtand "there? draw near and reach a bit, for Don "Diego treats us all." No ſooner were the words ſpoken, but he ſat down. When my maſter perceived that they had all intruded upon him, he began to be much concerned. They divided the ſpoil, giving Don Diego ſome few bones to pick, the reſt the curate and the others devoured. The ſharpers ſaid, "Pray, Sir, do "not eat too much ſupper, leſt it does you "harm;" and the curſed ſcholar anſwered, "Beſides, Sir, you muſt begin to practiſe to be "abſtemious, conſidering the life you are to "lead at Alcala." I and the other ſervant prayed heartily that God would put it into their hearts to leave ſomething; and when they had devoured every bit, and the curate was picking the bones over again, one of the ſharpers turned about, and ſaid, "God bleſs us, we have left "nothing for the ſervants; come hither gentle"men. Here, landlord, give them all the houſe "affords; take this piſtole to pay for it." Up ſtarted immediately my maſter's confounded imaginary kinſman, I mean the ſcholar, ſaying, "With your leave, good Sir, I muſt tell you, "I fear your breeding is not much; it is a ſign

" you are not acquainted with my couſin; he " will provide for his own ſervants and for ours " too, if we had any, as he has done for us." " Be not in a paſſion, Sir," replied the other, " we did not know ſo much before." When I ſaw all this ſly diſſimulation, I began to curſe them, and thought I ſhould never have done. The cloth was taken away, and they all deſired Don Diego to go to bed. He would have paid for the ſupper, and they anſwered, In the morning will be time enough. They ſtayed a while chatting together; my maſter aſked the ſcholar his name, and he anſwered, Don ſomething Coronel. The devil confound the deceitful dog, wherefoever he is. Then perceiving that the griping ſhopkeeper was aſleep, he ſaid, " Will " you have a little ſport, Sir, to make you " laugh? Let us put ſome trick upon this fel- " low, who has eaten but one pear upon the " road, and is as rich as a Jew." The ſharpers cried, " God-a-mercy, Maſter Licentiate, do ſo, " it is but reaſon." With this approbation he drew near the poor ſleeping old fellow, and ſlipped a wallet from under his feet, untied it, and took out a box, all the company flocking about, as if it had been lawful prize taken in war. He opened it, and found it full of Lozenges; all which he took out, and ſupplied

their place with ſtones, chips, and any rubbiſh that came next to hand. Then he eaſed himſelf a-top of all that, and over the excrement laid about a dozen of little glittering ſtones there are among ſome fine lime in Spain, with which they plaſter the outſides of houſes, and it glitters in the ſun like bits of glaſs. This done, he ſhut up the box, and ſaid, I have not done yet, for he has a leather bottle, out of which he poured all the wine, only ſome little he left in the bottom, and then ſtuffed it up with tow and wool, and ſtopped it. The ſcholar put all again into the wallet, and a great ſtone into the hood of his travelling coat, and then he and all the reſt went to bed, to ſleep about an hour or little more.

When it was time to ſet out, all the company waked and got up, and ſtill the old man ſleeped; they called him, and he could not get up for the weight of the ſtone that was in his hood. He looked to ſee what it was, and the innkeeper pretended to quarrel with him, ſaying, "God "is my life, could you pick up nothing elſe to "carry away, father, but this ſtone. I had been "finely ſerved, gentlemen, if I had not diſco-"vered it; I value it above an hundred crowns "becauſe it is good for the pain in the ſto-"mach." The old man ſwore and banned, that

he had not put it into his hood, the ſharpers reckoned up the bill, which came to ſix crowns; but the beſt arithmetician in Chriſtendom could never have made out that ſum. The ſcholars aſked what ſervice they could do us at Alcala; the reckoning was paid, we breakfaſted, and the old man took up his wallet; but for fear we ſhould ſee what he had in it, and ſo he might be obliged to diſtribute any, he untied it in the dark under his great coat, and laid hold of a bit of lime well daubed, which he clapped into his mouth, and going to cranch it with a tooth and a half he had, was like to loſe them both. He began to ſpit, and make faces, what with the pain, and what with the loathſome bit he had put into his mouth. We all went up to him, and the curate among the firſt, aſking, What ailed him? He began to curſe and ſwear, dropped down the wallet, and the ſcholar came up to him, ſaying, "Go behind me, Satan, here "is the croſs." The other opened a breviary, and would perſuade him he was poſſeſſed, till at laſt he told what ailed him, and begged they would give him leave to waſh his mouth with ſome wine he had in his leather bottle. They let him go, he opened his bottle, and pouring into a ſmall diſh, out came a little wine, ſo hairy and full of tow, that there was no drink-

ing, or enduring the ſight of it. Then the old man fell a raving beyond meaſure, but ſeeing all the company burſt their ſides with laughing, he was fain to grow calm, and get up into the waggon with the ſharpers and wenches. The curate and ſcholars mounted on aſſes, and we went into the coach. We were ſcarce gone from the door, before they all began to banter and ridicule us, declaring the trick they had put upon us. The innkeeper cried, "Good "maſter freſh-water ſcholar, a few of theſe "handſels will make you old and wiſe." The curſed ſcholar ſaid, "Pray, couſin, the next "time ſcratch when it itches, and not after-"wards." In ſhort, every one had his ſaying; but we thought beſt to take no notice, though, God knows, we were quite out of countenance. At length we got to Alcala, and alighted at an inn, where we ſpent all that day, for we came in at nine in the morning, in reckoning up the particulars of our laſt ſupper, but could never make out the account.

CHAP. V.

Our Entrance into Alcala, the Reception we had, paying for our Freedom, and what Tricks they put upon me, as being a New Comer.

TOWARDS the evening, before it was dark, we left the inn, to go to the houſe that had been hired for us, which was without St. James's Gate, in a court full of abundance of ſcholars; but in our houſe there were only three families of us. The owner, or landlord of it, was one of thoſe who believe in God out of complaiſance, or only in outward ſhow, ſuch as they vulgarly called Moriſco's, becauſe deſcended from the Moors; for there are abundance of this ſort of people, and of thoſe that have great noſes, and cannot endure the ſcent of bacon. Yet I do not by this mean to reflect upon the people of quality, which are there very numerous, and unſpotted in blood. The landlord received me with a worſe countenance than if I had been an inquiſitor; I know not whether he did it to make us reſpect him the more, or whether it was the nature of the beaſt, for it is no wonder they ſhould be ill natured who are of ſuch bad principles. We brought in our goods, made the beds, and reſted that night. When it was day,

all the ſcholars in the houſe came in their ſhirts to demand entrance-money of my maſter. He being an utter ſtranger to that affair, aſked me, What it was they would be at? whilſt I at the ſame time, for fear of what might happen, thruſt myſelf between two quilts, with only half my head out, like a tortoiſe. They demanded a couple of crowns, which were given them; and they ſet up a helliſh cry, ſinging, "Long live "our companion, and let him be admitted into "our friendſhip; let him enjoy all the privi- "leges of a freeman, and be allowed to have "the itch, to be greaſy, and as hungry as we "are." This ſaid, pray obſerve the privileges; they all tumbled down the ſtairs, we dreſſed ourſelves, and ſet out for the ſchools. My maſter was conducted by ſome collegians, his father's friends, and ſo took his place in the ſchool; but I being to go to another place, went all alone, and began to quake for fear. I had ſcarce ſet my foot into the great court, before they all faced me, and began to cry, "A novice." The better to colour the matter, I fell a laughing, as if I had not regarded it; but it availed me not, for eight or nine of them ſtanding about me began to grin and laugh out. I bluſhed; would to God I had not, for immediately one that was next me clapped his hand to his noſe, and ſtep-

ping aſide, ſaid, " This Lazarus is not raiſed " from the dead, he ſtinks ſo." Then they all ſtood off, ſtopping their noſes. I thinking to eſcape that way, held my noſe too, and ſaid, " You are in the right, gentlemen, here is a " great ſtink." They all burſt out a laughing, and getting farther off, gathered about an hundred ſtrong. They began to hauk, and give the alarm with their throats, and by their coughing, and opening and ſhutting of their mouths, I perceived they were preparing a volley of glanders for me. By this time a brawny bumpkin-ſcholar, who had got a cold, ſaluted me with a dreadful one, ſaying, " Thus I begin." Seeing myſelf beyond all hope of redreſs, cried out, I vow to God you ſhall —— I would have ſpoke out the reſt, but there fell ſuch a loathſome ſhower upon me, that I could not utter a word more. I had covered my face with my cloak, and ſtood ſuch a fair mark, that they all ſhot at me; and no doubt but it was worth while to ſee how they took their aim. By this time I was daubed all over from head to foot; but a ſly dog obſerving that I was covered, and had nothing on my face, came running towards me, crying out, as if he had been in a paſſion, " Enough; do not murder him." I thinking by their uſage that they had really deſigned it,

uncovered myſelf, to ſee how the caſe ſtood, and that very moment the villain, who made all that noiſe, ſhot a glander juſt betwixt my two eyes. Conſider what an anguiſh I was in; the hell-hounds gave ſuch a ſhout, that it quite amazed me; and I concluded, from their cleanſing of their ſtomachs upon me, that, to ſave the charge of apothecaries and doctors, they took the advantage of new comers to purge themſelves. After all this, they would have necked me as they do rabbits to kill them; but there was no touching me, without carrying off ſome part of their loathſome bounty, which hung all about my wretched cloak, then turned grey with filth, though it came in black. They left me, looking all over like an old man's ſpitting-ſheet. I went home, though I ſcarce knew the way; and it was good luck that this happened in the morning, for I met but two or three boys, who, I believe, were good natured, for they only threw half a dozen dirty clouts at me, and went their ways. I got into the houſe, and the Moorish landlord ſeeing me, fell a laughing, and made ſhow as if he would have ſpit upon me; which I dreading, cried out, "Hold, landlord, for I "am not the picture of Chriſt." Would to God I had never ſaid it, for he laid me on ſeveral pounds with the weights he had in his hand.

Having got this good help, beſides all the reſt, though half revenged, I went up, and was a long time before I could find out where to take hold of my cloak or caſſock. At laſt I took them off, hanged them up in a gallery, and laid me down upon the bed.

My maſter coming in found me aſleep, and not knowing of my loathſome diſaſter, was in a paſſion, and fell a tugging me by the hair ſo furiouſly, that had I not waked immediately, he had made me bald before my time. I ſtarted up, crying out, and complaining, and he ſtill more paſſionate, ſaid, is this the ſervice I am to expect from you, Paul! I muſt turn a new card. This went to my heart, and I anſwered, "You "are a great comfort to me, Sir, in my afflic- "tions; do but ſee what a condition that cloak "and caſſock are in, which have ſerved for "handkerchiefs to the filthieſt noſes, and ſpit- "ting-ſheets to the fouleſt throats that ever "poiſoned clean linen." This ſaid, I fell a-weeping; which he perceiving, believed me, looked for the caſſock, and ſeeing it, took pity on me, and ſaid, "Paul, look out ſharp, and "take care of yourſelf, for you have no father "or mother to take your part here." I told him all that had befallen me, and he ordered me to ſtrip, and go to my chamber, where four

ſervants of the other lodgers in the houſe lay. I went to bed and ſlept, and being refreſhed with that and a good ſupper, I found myſelf as well as if nothing had happened to me. But when misfortunes begin to fall, there is ſuch a ſeries of them linked together, as if they would never have an end. The other ſervants came to bed, who all ſaluted and aſked me, Whether I was ſick, and what made me ſo ſoon a-bed? I told them the whole ſtory; and immediately, as if they had been innocence itſelf, they began to bleſs themſelves, and ſaid, "Was there ever "ſuch wickedneſs acted? This would not be "tolerated among infidels." Another cried, "The proctors are in the fault, that they do not "take care to prevent it. Shall you know "them again?" I anſwered, I ſhould not, and thanked them for the kindneſs they ſeemed to ſhow me. This diſcourſe held till they ſtripped, went to bed, put out the candle, and I fell aſleep, as if I had been with my mother and brothers. It was about twelve of the clock, I believe, when one of them waked me, roaring out in a diſmal manner, "Help, Help, they kill me, "thieves!" At the ſame time there was a noiſe in his bed of talking and laſhes. I held up my head, and ſaid, "What is the matter there?" As ſoon as ever I uncovered myſelf, they laid

me on the back with mighty cat and nine-tails. I cried out, and would have got up; the other complained as much as I, but they only flogged me. I called out to God for vengeance, but the laſhes fell ſo thick upon me, they having pulled all the clothes off me, that I had no other refuge but to creep under the bed. I did ſo, and immediately the other three, who ſeemed to ſleep, began all to roar out, and I hearing the laſhes ſtill, concluded that ſome ſtranger ſcourged us all. In the meanwhile the hell-hound that was next me, ſkipped into my bed. This done the laſhes ceaſed, and all four of them got up, crying out amain, "It is a great "villany, and not be endured." Still I lay under my bed, whining like a dog that is pinched in a door, and ſhrinking myſelf all up, as if I had been drawn together by the cramp. The others made as if they had ſhut the door; then I crept out, got into my bed again, and aſking, whether any of them was hurt, they all complained bitterly. I lay down, covered myſelf up warm, and fell aſleep again; and happening to tumble about in my ſleep, when I waked, I found myſelf all daubed up to my very neck. They all got up, and I pleaded the flogging for an excuſe to lie a-bed. The devil himſelf could ont turn me from one ſide. I was full of con-

fuſion, conſidering whether the fright and diſorder had occaſioned my committing that beaſtlineſs, or whether I did it in my ſleep. In ſhort I was innocent and guilty at the ſame time, and knew not what excuſe to make for myſelf. My chamber-fellows drew near to me, complaining, and ſlily aſked me how I did; I anſwered, I was very ill; for I had been cruelly laſhed; and inquired of them, What the meaning of it could be? They replied, "We will anſwer for it, whoſoever it was ſhall not carry it to heaven, nor "hell; for the cunning man will tell us all; "but waving that, let us ſee whether you are "not hurt, for you made a piteous complaint." So ſaying, they went about to take off the bedclothes, to expoſe me. By this time my maſter came in, ſaying, "Shall I never make any good "of you, Paul? It is eight of the clock, and "you are a-bed ſtill. Riſe, you ſhameleſs ſcoundrel." The knaves, the better to impoſe upon me, told Don Diego the whole ſtory, and deſired him to let me reſt; but one of them added, "If you will not believe me, Sir, let us ſee, bro"ther;" and then he laid hold of the bedclothes to uncover me. I held faſt with teeth and hands, for fear of diſcovering the filthy ſecret; and when they found that way would not do, one of them cried, "Ads bobs, what a ſtink

" is here." Don Diego ſaid ſo too, becauſe it was matter of fact; and then they all began to look about the room, whether there was ever a cloſe-ſtool, or other filth, ſaying, there was no enduring of the place; and one of them added, " We ſhall have a fine time of it, to ſtudy in " this room." They looked into the beds, and removed them all, to ſee under, and then ſaid, " Doubtleſs there is ſomething under Paul's bed, " let us remove him into one of ours, and look " there." I perceiving this was like to be unavoidable, and that they were juſt going to lay hands on me, pretended I had a fit of the falling-ſickneſs, laid about me on all hands, and made ſtrange faces. They underſtanding the cheat, took the faſter hold of me, crying, " What a " pity it is." Don Diego held and pulled by my middle finger, accounted a help in that diſtemper; and ſo at length, between them all five they raiſed me up; and when they laid open the ſheets, all ſmeared and daubed from the head to the feet, they burſt out into ſuch a loud laughter, that the room ecchoed. " Poor lad," cried the impudent ſcoundrels, whilſt I pretended to be in a ſwoon, " pull him hard, Sir, by " that middle finger;" and my maſter thinking he did me ſome ſignal ſervice, tugged till he put it out of joint. The others propoſed cramping

my thighs, to fetch me to myſelf, ſaying, "Alas, "poor lad, no doubt but he befouled himſelf "juſt now when the fit came upon him." It is impoſſible to expreſs the anguiſh I was in, what with ſhame, what with my finger that was diſjointed, and what with the dread of being cramped. At length, fearing they would really put that villany in execution, for they had really put cords about my thighs, I made as if I came to myſelf; yet I was not ſo quick, but that the rogues being knaviſhly bent, had whipped the cords about my thighs, and tugged ſo hard, that they ſunk them an inch into my fleſh. Then they left me, crying, "Bleſs us, what a puny "creature you are." I cried for mere vexation, and they archly ſaid, "Hold your peace, your "betraying yourſelf is the leaſt concern, your "health is all." This done, they waſhed me, laid me in the bed again, and went their way. Being left alone, I lay and conſidered, that what I had endured in one day at Alcala, was worſe than all my ſufferings under Cabra at the boarding-ſchool. At noon I dreſſed me, cleaned my cloak and caſſock the beſt I could, waſhing it like an old clout, and waited for my maſter, who, when he came, aſked me, "How I did?" All the family dined, and ſo did I, though I eat but little, having but an indifferent ſtomach at

that time, and after dinner we all met to chat in an open gallery. The other ſervants, when they had ſufficiently bantered me, diſcovering the trick they had put upon me, laughed heartily: I was worſe out of countenance than before, and ſaid to myſelf, "Look to yourſelf, "Paul, ſtand upon your guard." I reſolved to begin a new courſe of life; we were all made friends, and from that day forwards lived as lovingly in the houſe together, as if we had been all one mother's children, and no man diſturbed me any more at the ſchools, or public places.

CHAP. VI.

Of the wicked Old Houſekeeper, and the firſt knaviſh pranks I played at Alcala.

When you are at Rome, do as they do at Rome, ſays the proverb, and it is well ſaid. I took it ſo ſeriouſly into conſideration, that I fully reſolved to play the knave among knaves, and to outdo them all if poſſible. I know not whether I ſucceeded as I deſigned, but I am ſure I uſed all my endeavours. In the firſt place, I made a law, that it ſhould be no leſs

than death for any pigs to come into our houſe, or for any of our old houſekeeper's chickens to run out of the yard into our room. It happened one day, that two of the cleverest porkers, that ever my eyes beheld, ſlipped into our dominions; I was then at play with the other ſervants, and hearing them grunt, ſaid to one of my companions, "Go ſee who it is that grunts "in our houſe;" he went and brought word they were two ſwine. No ſooner had I heard theſe words, but I went out in a paſſion, ſaying, "It "was a great deal of impudence in them to "grunt in other people's houſes." Then clapping the door to, in the ſame heat of blood, I run my ſword into the throats of them both, and then we cut off their heads. To prevent their cry being heard abroad, we all ſet up our throats, roaring as loud as poſſibly we could, as if we had been ſinging, and ſo they gave up the ghoſt among us. We paunched them, ſaved the blood, and by the help of our ſtraw bed, half ſinged them in the yard; ſo that when our maſters came home all was over, though after an indifferent manner; only the puddings were not yet made, which was not for want of expedition, for we had left half of the filth in the guts, merely to ſave loſs of time. Don Diego and our ſteward were told the ſtory, and flew

into ſuch a paſſion againſt me, that the other lodgers, who were ready to burſt with laughing, thought fit to take my part. Don Diego aſked me, what I could ſay for myſelf, if the thing ſhould be found out, and I ſhould be taken up for it? I anſwered, I would plead hunger, which is the common ſanctuary of all ſcholars; and if that was not enough, I would urge, that ſeeing them come into the houſe without knocking, as if they had been at home, I thought they had been our own. They all laughed at my plea, and Don Diego ſaid, "By my troth, Paul, "you begin to underſtand your trade." It was very well worth obſerving the difference between my maſter and me, he ſo ſober and religious, and I ſo arch and knaviſh, ſo that the one was a foil to the other, and ſerved to ſet off either his virtue or vice. Our old houſekeeper was pleaſed to the very heart, for we both played our parts, and had conſpired againſt the larder. I was caterer, and a mere Judas in my employment, and ever ſince retained an inclination to cribbing and ſtealing. The meat always waſted in the old jade's keeping, and ſhe never dreſſed wedder-mutton when ſhe could get ewe or goat; beſides, ſhe picked the fleſh off the bones before ſhe boiled them, ſo that the diſhes ſerved up looked as if the cattle had died of a

conſumption; and the broth was ſo clear, that, had it been conſolidated, it might have paſſed for cryſtal; only now and then, for change, that the ſoup might look a little fat, ſhe clapped in a few candles ends. When I was by, ſhe would ſay to my maſter, "In troth, Sir, Paul is the "beſt ſervant in Spain, bating his unluckineſs; "but that may well enough be borne with, be- "cauſe he is honeſt. He buys the beſt the "market affords." I gave the ſame character of her, and ſo we put upon the whole houſe. If there was any ſtore of coals, bacon, or oil, laid in, we ſtole half of it, and ſome while after would ſay, Pray, gentlemen, retrench your expences a little, for if you go on at this rate, you had need have a mint of money; the coals or the oil is ſpent, but no wonder at the rate that you uſe it; you had beſt order more to be brought in. Sir, give Paul the money, and you will have a better account of it.. Money was accordingly given me, and we ſold them the other half we had ſtole, and half of what we brought, and that was in full.

If ever I happened to buy any thing in the market at the real value, then the old houſe-keeper and I would pretend to fall out and quarrel, and ſhe ſeeming to be in a paſſion, would ſay, "Do not tell me, Paul, that this is

"a pennyworth of ſalad." Then I would ſeem to cry, and make a great deal of noiſe, went to complain to my maſter, and perſuaded him to ſend the ſteward to inquire, that the old woman might be convinced, who ſtill ſcolded on deſignedly. The ſteward went and found as I ſaid, by which means both maſter and ſteward were impoſed upon, and had the better opinion of me for my honeſty, and of the houſekeeper for her care. Don Diego being thus fixed in his good opinion of me, uſed to ſay to her, "Would "to God Paul were otherwiſe as virtuous as he "is honeſt; I ſee plainly he is as truſty as you "repreſent him." Thus we held them in ignorance, and ſucked them like horſe leeches. I do not at all doubt, reader, but you wonder how much we might cheat them of at the year's end; the ſum was certainly conſiderable, yet I ſuppoſe we were not obliged to make reſtitution, for the old woman never miſſed going to church daily, yet I never ſaw any diſpoſition in her to reſtore the leaſt part; nor did I perceive any ſcruple of conſcience ſhe made of it, though ſhe was ſo great a ſaint. She always wore a pair of beads about her neck, ſo big, that the wood of them might have ſerved to roaſt a ſirloin of beef. It was all hung with croſſes, medals, pictures, and other trinkets, on all which

ſhe ſaid ſhe prayed every night for her benefactors. She had a catalogue of an hundred and odd ſaints that were her patrons; and in truth ſhe had need of no leſs help to bear her out of all her wickedneſs. Her chamber was over my maſter's, where ſhe was longer at prayers than a fanatical preacher is in his ſermon; and all in Latin, ſuch as it was, for neither mortals on earth, nor angels in heaven, could underſtand it, which ſhe did to appear the more innocent and ſimple; but we were ready to ſplit our ſides with laughing. Beſides theſe ſhe had many other excellent qualifications, for ſhe was an extraordinary meſſenger of love, and contriver of pleaſure, which is the ſame as a bawd; but her excuſe to me was, that it came to her by deſcent, as the kings of France had the gift of curing the king's evil. You will imagine perhaps that we always lived in unity; but who does not know that the two beſt friends, if they are covetous, and live together, will endeavour to cheat one another, and I took care to let ſlip no opportunity.

The old woman kept hens in the yard, and had about a dozen or fourteen well grown chickens, which made my teeth water to be at them, for they were fit to be ſerved up to any gentleman's table. It happened one day, that

ſhe going to feed them, as the common cuſtom is in Spain, called them together, crying, Pio, Pio, Pio. This ſhe repeated very often, and I being upon the catch, cried out as loud as ſhe, "As God ſhall ſave me, nurſe, I wiſh I had ſeen "you kill a man, or clip and coin, for then I "might have kept your counſel, rather than do "as you have done; and now I muſt be forced "to diſcover it. The Lord have mercy upon "us both." She ſeeing me act all that concern and diſorder, was ſomewhat ſtartled, and ſaid, "Why, what have I done, Paul? If you are in "jeſt, do not perplex me any longer. What "do you mean by jeſting?" ſaid I; "a curſe "on it, I cannot poſſibly avoid giving informa- "tion to the inquiſition, elſe I ſhall be excom- "municated." "The inquiſition," quoth ſhe, trembling like a leaf on a tree, "Why, have I committed any crime againſt religion? Why, there's "the caſe," anſwered I; "don't you think to "dally with the inquiſitors, you had better "own you were in the wrong, that you ſpoke "like a fool, eat your words, and not deny the "blaſphemy and irreverence." She replied in a great conſternation, "But tell me, Paul, will "they puniſh me if I recant;" "No," ſaid I, "for "then they will only abſolve you." "Then I "recant," quoth ſhe, "but do you tell me "what it is I am to recant, for I know nothing

" of it as I hope for mercy." " Bleſs me," replied I, " Is it poſſible you ſhould be ſo dull, as " not to reflect that, but I don't know how to " expreſs it, the diſreſpect was ſo great, that I " am afraid to repeat it. Don't you remember " you called the chickens Pio, Pio, and Pius is " the name of ſeveral popes, who are Chriſt's " vicars upon earth, and heads of the church? " Now, do you conſider whether that be any " trifling ſin?" She ſtood as if ſhe had been thunder-ſtruck, and after a while cried, " 'Tis " true I ſaid ſo, Paul, but may I be curs'd if I " did it with any ill deſign. I recant; do you " conſider whether ſome means may not be " found to avoid informing againſt me; for I " ſhall die if they get me into the inquiſition." " Provided you will take your oath," anſwered I, " on the holy altar, that you did it not with " any ill intent, I may, upon that aſſurance, " forbear impeaching you; but then you muſt " give me thoſe two chickens that fed when " you were calling them by that moſt ſanctified " name of the popes, that I may carry them to " an officer of the inquiſition for him to burn " them, for they are defiled; and in the next " place, you muſt ſwear poſitively never to be " guilty of the like again. This you muſt do " now, and to morrow I'll ſwear." For the

better fixing of this notion in her head, I went on, "The worſt of it is, Tabitha," (for that was her name), "that I ſhall be in danger; "for the inquiſitor will aſk whether I am not "the perſon, and may put me to trouble. Do "you e'en carry them yourſelf, for I am afraid." "For the Lord's ſake," cried ſhe, "Paul, take "pity on me, and do you carry them; there is "no danger of your coming to any harm." I made her court me a long while, and at laſt, though it was the thing I aimed at, I ſuffered myſelf to be perſuaded. I took the chickens, hid them in my chamber, made ſhow as if I went abroad, and came in again, ſaying, "It "has fallen out better than I expected; the "cunning officer would fain have come after "me to ſee the woman, but I gave him the ſlip "curiouſly, and did my buſineſs." She hugged and kiſſed me, and gave me another chicken for my pains, which I carried to his companions, had them all dreſſed at the cook's, and eat them with my fellow-ſervants. Don Diego and the houſekeeper came to hear of the trick, and all the family made excellent ſport with it. The old woman had like to have fretted herſelf to death for mere vexation, and was a thouſand times in the mind, for revenge, to diſcover all my cheats, but that ſhe was as deep in the dirt

as I was in the mire. Being thus at variance with the old woman, and no way now left to put upon her, I contrived new ways to play my pranks, and fell to that the ſcholars call ſnatching and ſhoplifting, at which ſport I had many pleaſant adventures.

One night, about nine of the clock, at which time there are but few people abroad, paſſing through the great ſtreet, I ſpied a confectioner's ſhop open, and in it a frail of raiſins upon the counter. I whipped in, took hold of it, and ſet a running; the confectioner ſcoured after me, and ſo did ſeveral neighbours and ſervants. Being loaded, I perceived, that though I had the ſtart, they would overtake me, and therefore turning the corner of the ſtreet, I clapt the frail upon the ground, ſat down upon it, and wrapping my cloak about my leg, began to cry out, holding it with both hands, "God for-"give him, he has trod upon me, and crippled "me." They heard what I ſaid, and when they came up, I began to cry, "For the Lord's "ſake pity the lame, I pray God you may ne-"ver be lame." They came to me, panting, and out of breath, and ſaid, "Friend, did you "ſee a man run this way?" "He is before you," anſwered I, "for he trod upon me." With this they ſtarted again, and vaniſhed. I was left

alone, carried my frail home, and told the ſtory, which they would not believe, though they highly applauded the ingenuity; for which reaſon I invited them to ſee me ſteal a box of ſweetmeats another night. They came, and obſerving that all the boxes were ſo far within the ſhop, that there was no reaching them, concluded the thing was impracticable, eſpecially becauſe the confectioner having heard what had happened to the other, was upon his guard. However, I went on, and drawing my ſword, which was a ſtiff tuck, about a dozen paces ſhort of the ſhop, run on, and when I came up to the door, I cried out, "You are a dead man," and made a ſtrong paſs juſt before the confectioner's breaſt, who dropt down, calling for help, and my ſword run clear through a box of ſweetmeats, which I drew out with it, and carried it off. They were all amazed at the contrivance, and ready to burſt with laughing, to hear the confectioner bid the people ſearch him, for he was certainly wounded, and knew the other was a man he had a falling out with; but when he turned about, the other boxes being diſordered by the pulling out of that one, he diſcovered the cheat, and fell a bleſſing himſelf, as if he would never have done. The truth of it is, I never ate any thing that pleaſed me ſo well

My companions uſed to ſay, I could maintain the family with what I liſted, which is only a modeſt term for ſtealing. Being then but a boy, and hearing myſelf commended for theſe knaviſh pranks, it encouraged me to commit more. I uſed to bring home my girdle hung all round with little pitchers, which I ſtole from nuns, begging ſome water to drink of them; and when they turned it out in their wheel, I went off with the mugs, they being ſhut up, and not able to help themſelves; ſo that it became a faſhion not to give out any thing without a pledge for the veſſel.

After this I promiſed Don Diego and his companions, that I would one night diſarm the round. The night was appointed, and we ſet out upon the exploit. I went foremoſt with another ſervant of our family, and as ſoon as I diſcovered the watch, went up as if I had been in a great fright, ſaying, "Is it the round?" They anſwered, "It was." Then ſaid I, "Is "the governor here?" They replied, "He was." Then I kneeled down, and ſaid, "Sir, It is in "your power to do me right, to revenge my "wrong, and to do the public a great piece of "ſervice; be pleaſed to hear a word or two I "have to communicate in private, if you deſire "to ſecure ſome notorious criminals." He ſtep-

ped aſide, and ſome of his officers were laying hands on their ſwords, and others taking out their rods of authority, whilſt I ſaid, "Sir, I am "come from Seville, in purſuit of ſix of the moſt "notorious malefactors in the world; they are "all thieves and murderers, and among them is "one that killed my mother, and a brother of "mine, without any provocation, but to exer-"ciſe his barbarity. This is proved upon him, "and they all come, as I heard them ſay, with "a French ſpy; and by what I can further gueſs "from their words, he is ſent (then I lowered "my voice) by Antony Perez." At theſe words the governor gave a ſkip, and cried, "Where are "they?" "They are, Sir," ſaid I, "in a bawdy-"houſe; do not ſtay, good Sir, the ſouls of my "mother and brother will requite you with their "prayers, and the king will reward you." He ſaid very earneſtly, "Good God! let us loſe no "time, follow me all of you; and give me a tar-"get." I took him aſide again, and added, "Sir, the whole buſineſs will be ſpoiled, if you "do ſo; the only way to do it, is, for them all "to go in without ſwords, and one by one, for "they are above in the rooms, and have piſtols, "and as ſoon as they ſee any come with ſwords, "knowing that none can wear them but officers "of juſtice, they will be ſure to fire. It is bet-

" ter only to go in with your daggers, and then " you may ſecure them behind, for we are " enough of us." The governor being eager to ſecure them at any rate, approved of my contrivance. By this time we were come near the place, and the governor thus inſtructed by me, ordered them all to hide their ſwords in a field there is juſt before the houſe under the graſs. They did ſo, and went on. I had already inſtructed my companion, that as ſoon as ever they laid them down, he ſhould ſeize them, and make the beſt of his way home. He did ſo, and when they were all going into the houſe, I ſtayed out the laſt; and as ſoon as they were entered, being followed by ſeveral people they picked up by the way, I gave them the ſlip, and turned ſhort into a narrow lane that comes out near La Victoria, running all the way as ſwift as a greyhound. When the round was all in the houſe, and found none there but ſcholars and ſcoundrels, which is all one, they began to look about for me, and not finding me, ſuſpected it was ſome trick put upon them. Being thus diſappointed, they went to take their ſwords, but there was no ſign of them. It is impoſſible to expreſs what pains the governor, attended by the vice-chancellor of the univerſity, took that night. They ſearched all the town to the very

beds, and when they came to ours, I was in bed, with a nightcap on, and close covered, for fear of being known, a candle lighted in one hand, and a crucifix in the other, with a sham priest praying by me, and all the rest of my companions on their knees about the bed. The vice-chancellor, with all his officers, came in, and seeing that spectacle, went out again, supposing no such prank could be played by any there. They made no search, but the vice-chancellor prayed by me, and asked whether I was speechless; they answered, I was; and so away they went, in despair of making any discovery. The vice-chancellor swore he would deliver up the offender, if he could find him; and the governor vowed he would hang him, though he were the son of a grandee of Spain. I got up, and this prank makes sport at Alcala to this very day. To avoid being tedious, I omit giving an account of my robbing in the open market, as if it had been on a mountain; not a box or case escaped me, but I had it home, and kept the house in fuel all the year; and as for the apple-women, nothing was ever safe in their stalls or standings, for I had declared perpetual war against them, on account of the affront put upon me when I was king at Segovia. I pass by the contributions I raised on the fields of

beans, vineyards, and orchards, all about that part of the country. Theſe and the like practices gained me the reputation of a ſharp unlucky fellow among all people. The young gentlemen were ſo fond of me, that I had ſcarce leiſure to wait upon Don Diego, whom I honoured as he deſerved, for the great kindneſs he bore me.

CHAP. VII.

How I received News of my Father's Death, parted from Don Diego, and what Courſe of Life I reſolved on for the future.

At length Don Diego received a letter from his father, and with it one for me, from an uncle of mine, whoſe name was Alonſo Ramplon, a man of a virtuous diſpoſition, and very well known in Segovia, as being the finiſher of the law, and for four years laſt paſt, the execution of all its determinations went through his hands. In ſhort, to ſpeak plain, he was the executioner or hangman; but ſuch a clever fellow at his buſineſs, that it would not vex a man to be hanged by him, he did it ſo neatly. This worthy perſon wrote to me from Segovia to Alcala, as follows

" *My Dear* PAUL,

" THE great affairs of this employ-
" ment, in which it has pleaſed his majeſty to
" place me, have been the occaſion of my not
" writing to you before; for if there be any
" thing to find fault with in the king's ſervice,
" it is the great trouble and attendance it re-
" quires; which, however, is in ſome meaſure
" requited by the honour of being his ſervant.
" It troubles me to be forced to ſend you diſ-
" agreeable news; but your father died eight
" days ago, with as much bravery and reſolu-
" tion as ever man did; I ſpeak of my own
" knowledge, as having truſſed him up myſelf.
" The cart became him as well as if it had been
" a chariot, and all that ſaw the rope about his
" neck, concluded him as clever a fellow as ever
" was hanged. He looked up all the way he
" went at the windows, very much unconcern-
" ed, courteouſly bowing to all the tradeſmen,
" that left their ſhops to gaze at him, and turn-
" ed up his whiſkers ſeveral times. He deſired
" the prieſts that went to prepare him for death,
" not to be too eager, but to reſt and take a
" breathing-time, extolling any remarkable ex-
" preſſions they uſed. Being come to the triple
" tree, he preſently ſet his foot on the ladder,
" and went up it nimbly, not creeping on all

" four as others do; and perceiving that one of
" the rounds of it was cracked through, he turn-
" ed to the officers attending, and bid them get
" it mended for the next that came, becauſe all
" men had not his ſpirit. I cannot expreſs how
" much his perſon and carriage was applauded.
" At the top of the ladder he ſat down, ſet his
" clothes handſomely about him, took the rope,
" and clapped the nooſe to his ear, and then per-
" ceiving the Jeſuit was going to preach to him,
" he turned to him, and ſaid, Father, I accept of
" the will for the deed, let us have a few ſtaves
" of a pſalm, and have done quickly, for I hate
" to be tedious. This was done accordingly; he
" charged me to put on his cap a little to one
" ſide, and to wipe his ſlaver, which I did; and
" then he ſwang, without ſhrinking up his legs,
" or making ugly faces; but kept ſuch ſedate-
" neſs in his countenance, that it was a pleaſure
" to behold him. I quartered him out, and left
" the ſeveral parts on the highways; God knows
" what a trouble it is to me, to ſee him there
" daily treating the crows and ravens; but I
" ſuppoſe the paſtry cooks hereabouts will ſoon
" eaſe us of that ſad ſpectacle, burying him in
" their minced pies. I cannot give you a much
" better account of your mother; for, though ſtill
" living, ſhe is a priſoner in the inquiſition at

"Toledo, becauſe ſhe would not let the dead "reſt in their graves. They give out, that every "night ſhe uſed to ſalute a great he-goat, kiſ- "ſing him under the tail. In her houſe were "found as many arms, legs, and heads, as would "have ſtocked a charnel-houſe; and ſhe reckon- "ed it one of her ſmalleſt abilities to counterfeit "virgins, and ſolder cracked maidenheads. They "ſay ſhe would fly up a chimney, and ride faſt- "er upon a broom-ſtaff, than another can upon "the beſt Andaluſian horſe; I am ſorry ſhe diſ- "graces us all, and me more particularly, as "being the king's officer, and ſuch kindred does "not become my poſt. Dear child, here are "ſome goods of your father's, that have been "concealed, to the value of four hundred du- "cats: I am your uncle, and all I have is yours. "Upon ſight hereof, you may come away hi- "ther, for your knowledge in Latin and rhe- "toric, will qualify you to make you an excel- "lent hangman. Let me have your anſwer "ſpeedily, and till then God keep you, &c."

I muſt confeſs, I was much troubled at this freſh diſgrace, and yet, in ſome meaſure, I was glad of it, for the ſcandalous lives of parents, make their greateſt misfortunes a comfort to their children. I went away haſtily to Don Diego,

who was then reading his father's letter, in which he ordered him to leave the univerſity, and return home, but not to take me with him, becauſe of the account he had received of my unluckineſs. He told me he muſt be gone, and how his father commanded him to part with me, which he was ſorry for; and I was ſo much more. He added, he would recommend me to another gentleman, his friend, to ſerve him. I ſmiled, and anſwered, "Sir, the caſe is altered; "I have other deſigns in my head, and aim at "greater matters, ſo that I muſt take another "courſe; for though hitherto I was at the foot "of the ladder, in order to mount, you muſt "underſtand that my father has got up to the "top of it." With this I told how bravely he had died, at his full ſtretch; how he was carved out, and ſerved up as a feaſt to the birds of the air. That my good uncle the executioner, had ſent me the whole account, and acquainted me with my mammy's confinement; for I could be plain with him, becauſe he knew all my pedigree. He ſeemed to be much concerned, and aſked how I intended to beſtow myſelf. I informed him with all my reſolutions, and ſo the very next day he went away for Segovia, very melancholy, and I ſtayed in the houſe, without taking the leaſt notice of my misfortune. I

burned the letter, for fear it might be dropped, and ſomebody read it, and began to provide for my journey to Segovia, deſigning to take poſſeſſion of what was my due, and know my kindred, that I might ſhun them.

CHAP. VIII.

My journey from Alcala to Segovia, and what happened by the way till I came to Rejas, where I lay that Night.

At length the day came when I left the ſweeteſt life I have ever known ſince. I cannot expreſs how much it troubled me to leave ſo many friends and dear acquaintance, for they were very numerous. I ſold what little I had got underhand, to bear my charges on the way; and with ſome tricks and ſleights of hand, made up about forty crowns, hired a mule, and left my lodging, where I had nothing to leave behind. The Lord alone knows what a hue and cry there was after me; the ſhoemaker roared for the ſhoes he had truſted me with; the old houſekeeper ſcolded for her wages; the landlord fretted for his rent. One cried, My heart always miſgave that I ſhould be ſo ſerved; another ſaid, They were much in the right who told me that this fellow was a cheat.

In ſhort, I was ſo generally beloved, that I left half the town in tears for me when I came away, and the other half laughing at thoſe that bemoaned themſelves. I diverted myſelf with theſe thoughts along the road, when having paſſed through the town of Torote, I overtook a man riding on a he-mule, with a pannel. He talked to himſelf very haſtily, and was ſo wrapt in imagination, that he did not perceive me, though I was cloſe by his ſide. I ſaluted him, and he returned the courteſy; then I aſked which way he was travelling; and after a few ſuch queſtions and anſwers had paſſed between us, began to diſcourſe about the Turks coming down, and the king's forces. Then he began to lay a ſcheme for recovering of the Holy Land, and the taking of Algiers; by which diſcourſe I perceived that he was a politic, projecting madman. We went on with our dialogue as became two ſcoundrels, and ſkipping from one ſubject to another, fell laſt upon Flanders. There I hit his vein, for he fetched up a deep ſigh, and ſaid, "That country has coſt me more "than it has done the king; for I have been "upon a project about theſe fourteen years, "which were it not impracticable, as it is, "would have ſet all right there long ago." "What can that be," anſwered I, "which is ſo

"convenient and uſeful, and yet at the ſame "time impracticable, and not to be put in exe- "cution." "Who told you," replied he very haſtily, "that it cannot be put in execution? "It can be executed, for its being impracticable "is another matter; and were it not for fear of "being troubleſome, I would tell you what it "is; but it will all out; for I deſign very ſud- "denly to print it, with ſome other ſmall works "of mine, among which I propoſe to the king "two ſeveral methods for recovering Oſtend." I entreated him to acquaint me with them; and he pulling ſome papers out of his pocket, ſhow- ed me a draught of the enemy's works, and of ours, and ſaid, "Sir, you plainly ſee that all this "difficulty lies in this inlet of the ſea; now, my "contrivance is to ſuck it dry with ſponges, "and ſo to remove that obſtacle." This wild notion made me burſt into a loud fit of laugh- ter, and he looking me earneſtly in the face, went on, "I never ſhowed it to any body but "has done the ſame as you do, for they are all "mightily pleaſed with it." "Truly," replied I, "it is an extraordinary pleaſure and ſatisfac- "tion to me to be acquainted with a deſign ſo "new and reaſonable; but, Sir, be pleaſed to "conſider, that when you have once ſucked up "the water that is in it, the ſea will throw in

"more." "The ſea will do no ſuch thing," anſwered he, "for I have examined it very nice-"ly; beſides, that I have found out an inven-"tion to ſink the ſea twelve fathom all about "there." I durſt not make any objection, for fear he ſhould ſay he had a project to draw down the ſky to us. In all my days I never met with ſuch a madman. He told me, that Juanelo, a famous engineer, who brought water from the river Tagus, up a vaſt hill, to ſerve the city Toledo, had done nothing; for he was now contriving to bring the whole river up to that city, a much eaſier way; and when he came to explain the method, it was to be by a ſpell; pray do but mind whether ever ſuch follies were heard of in the world; but he went on, and added, "Yet I do not deſign to put this in "execution, unleſs the king will firſt ſettle a "good eſtate upon me, and knight me, for I "am capable enough of that honour, becauſe I "have good teſtimonials of my gentility." This rambling wild diſcourſe laſted us to Torrejon, where he ſtayed to ſee a kinſwoman. I went on very well pleaſed, and laughing heartily at the projects he ſpent his time in.

I had not gone far before I ſpied at a diſtance a mule looſe, and a man by her a-foot, who looking into a book, drew ſome lines, and

meaſured them with a pair of compaſſes. He leaped and ſkipped about from ſide to ſide, and now and then laying one finger upon the other, made ſeveral extravagant motions. I muſt confeſs, that ſtopping at a good diſtance ſome time to obſerve him, I at firſt concluded he was a conjurer, and was almoſt afraid to go on. At laſt I reſolved to venture, and drawing near, he ſpied me, ſhut his book, and going to mount, his foot ſlipt out of the ſtirrup, and he fell. I helped him up, and he ſaid, "I took not the "due proportion in riſing, to make the half "circumference of mounting." I did not underſtand what he meant, but preſently gueſſed what he was, for a more extravagant diſtracted man was never born of a woman. He aſked whether I was going to Madrid in a direct line, or took a circumflex road? Though I did not underſtand him, yet I anſwered, That by circumflex. Next he aſked me whoſe ſword that was I had by my ſide? and having anſwered it was mine, he viewed it, and ſaid, "That bar "ought to be longer, to ward off the cuts that "are made upon the centre of the thruſts:" And thus he went on, ſputtering out ſuch a parcel of cramp words, that I was fain to aſk him what his profeſſion was? He told me he was a ſolid maſter of the noble ſcience of de-

fence, and would make it good upon any ground in Spain. I could not forbear laughing, and anſwered, By my troth, Sir, I rather took you for a conjurer, when I ſaw you deſcribing circles, and making ſuch antic motions in the field. "The reaſon of that," replied he, "was becauſe "there occurred to me a thruſt in quart, fetch-"ing the greater compaſs, to engage my adverſa-"ry's ſword, and killing him before he can ſay his "ſoul is his own, that he may not diſcover who "did it; and I was then reducing of it to ma-"thematical rules." "Is it poſſible," ſaid I, "that the mathematics ſhould be concerned in "that affair?" "Not only the mathematics," quoth he, "but divinity, philoſophy, muſic, "and phyſic." "I do not queſtion it as to the "laſt," ſaid I, "ſince that art aims at killing. "Do not make a jeſt of it," continued he, "for "I will now teach you an excellent guard, and "at the ſame time you ſhall lay on the great "cuts, which ſhall contain the ſpiral lines of "the ſword." "I do not underſtand one word of "all you ſay," anſwered I. And he again, "Why, here you have them in this book, which "is called, The Wonders of the Sword. It is "an excellent one, and contains prodigious "things; and to convince you of it, at Rejas, "where we ſhall lie to night, you ſhall ſee me

" perform wonders with two ſpits; and you " need not queſtion, but that whoſoever reads " this book, will kill as many as he pleaſes." " Either that book teaches men how to make " plagues," replied I, " or it was writ by ſome " doctor of phyſic." " What do you mean by " a doctor," replied he, " he is an extraordinary " wiſe man, and I could find in my heart to ſay " more."

We held on this ridiculous diſcourſe till we came to Rejas, and went into an inn; but as we were alighting, he called out to me as loud as he could, to be ſure firſt to form an obtuſe angle with my legs, and then reducing them to parallel lines, to come perpendicularly to the ground. The landlord ſeeing me laugh, did ſo too, and aſked me, " Whether that gentleman " was an Indian, that he ſpoke ſuch an un- " known tongue." I thought I ſhould have died with laughing between them; but he preſently went up to the hoſt, and ſaid, " Pray, " Sir, lend me a couple of ſpits to make two or " three angles, and I will reſtore them immedi- " ately." " Lord bleſs me, Sir," anſwered the hoſt, " give me the angles, and my wife will " roaſt them in a trice, though they are a ſort " of birds I never heard the names of before." " They are no birds," replied the other; and

turning to me, added, "Pray, Sir, do but ob-
"ſerve the effects of ignorance. Let me have
"the ſpits, for I want them only to fence with,
"and perhaps you will ſee me do that to-day,
"which may be worth more to you than all you
"have got in your life." In fine, the ſpits were in uſe, and we were fain to take up with two long ladles. Never was any thing ſo ridiculous ſeen in this world. He gave a ſkip, and ſaid, "This ſally gains me more ground, and puts "by my adverſary's ſword; now I make my "advantage of the remiſs motion to kill in the "natural way; this ſhould be a cut, and this a "thruſt." He came not within a mile of me, but danced round with his ladle; now I ſtanding ſtill all the while, all his motions looked as if he were fencing with a pot that is boiling over the fire. Then he went on, ſaying, "In "ſhort, this is the true art, not like the drunken "follies of fencing maſters, who underſtand no-"thing but drinking." The words were ſcarce out of his mouth, before a great he-mulatto ſtepped out of the next room, with a pair of whiſkers like two bruſhes, a hat as big as an umbrella, a buff-doublet under a looſe coat, bandy-legged, hook-nos'd, and with two or three ſcandalous ſcars croſs his face, a dagger that might have ſerved Goliah, and a hanging

look, and ſaid, "I am an approved maſter, and "have my certificate about me, and by this "light I'll make an example of any man that "dare preſume to reflect upon ſo many brave "fellows as profeſs the noble ſcience." Seeing we were like to be in a broil, I ſtept in, and ſaid, "He had not ſpoke to him, and therefore "he had no occaſion to be affronted." "Draw "your ſword, if you have ever a one," added he, "and let us try who has moſt ſkill, without "playing the fool with ladles." My poor wretched companion opened his book, and cried aloud, "Here it is, as I ſay, in the book, and it "is printed by authority; and I'll maintain "with the ladle, that all it contains is true; or "elſe without the ladle, either here, or upon "any other ground; and if any body does not "believe it, let us meaſure it." This ſaid, he pulled out his compaſſes, and went on, "This "is an obtuſe angle." The fencing-maſter drew his dagger, and replied, "I neither know "who is angle, nor who is obtuſe; nor did I "ever hear ſuch words before; but I'll cut you "in pieces with this dagger in my hand." He ran at the poor devil, who fled from him amain, ſkipping about the houſe, and crying, "He can-"not hurt me, for I have gained upon his ſword." The landlord and I parted them, with the help

of other people that came in, though I was ſcarce able to ſtand for laughing. The honeſt madman was put into his chamber, and I with him. We ſupped, and all the houſe went to bed. About two of the clock he got up in his ſhirt, and began to ramble about the room, ſkipping and ſputtering a deal of nonſenſe in mathematical terms. He waked me, and not ſo ſatisfied, went down to the landlord, to give him a light, ſaying, he had found a fixed object for the croſs paſs upon the bow. The landlord wiſhed him at the devil for waking of him; but ſtill the other tormented him, till he called him a madman, and then he came up, and told me, if I would riſe I ſhould ſee the curious fence he had found out againſt the Turks and their ſimitars, and added, he would go ſhow it to the king immediately, becauſe it was very advantageous to Chriſtendom. By this time it was day, we all got up, paid our ſhot, we reconciled the madman and the fencing-maſter, and went away, ſaying, That what my companion alleged was good in itſelf, but it made more men mad than ſkilful at their weapon, becauſe not one in an hundred underſtood the leaſt part of it.

CHAP. IX.

The pleaſant Diſcourſe I had with a Poet on the Road till I came to Madrid.

I held on my journey to Madrid, and my mad companion took his leave to go another road; when he had gone a little way, he turned back very haſtily, and calling on me as loud as he could, though we were in the field where none could hear us, he whiſpered in my ear, "Pray, "Sir, let me conjure you, as you hope to live, "not to diſcover any of the mighty ſecrets I "have acquainted you with, relating to the art "of fencing, but keep them to yourſelf, ſince "you are a man of a ſound judgment." I promiſed ſo to do; he went his way again, and I fell a laughing at the comical ſecret. I travelled about a league without meeting any body, and was conſidering with myſelf how difficult a matter it was for me to tread the paths of virtue and honour, ſince it was requiſite, in the firſt place, that I ſhould hide the ſcandal of my parents, and then have ſo much worth myſelf, as to conceal me from their ſhame. I was ſo fond of theſe, as I ſuppoſed noble thoughts, that I congratulated myſelf for them, and ſaid, "It "will be much more honourable in me, who

" had none to learn virtue from, than in thoſe " who had it hereditary from their predeceſſors." Theſe thoughts had filled my head, when I overtook a very old clergyman riding on a mule towards Madrid. We fell into diſcourſe, and he aſked me whence I came? I told him, from Alcala. " God's curſe," ſaid he, " on ſuch baſe " people, ſince there was not one man of ſenſe " to be found among them." I aſked him how could that be ſaid of ſuch a town, where there were ſo many learned men? He anſwered, in a great paſſion, " Learned! I'll tell you how " learned, Sir! I have for theſe fourteen years " laſt paſt, made all the ſongs and ballads, and " the verſes for the bedels at Chriſtmas, in the " village of Majalaonda, where I am reader; " and thoſe you call learned men, when I put " up ſome of my works among the reſt, at the " public act, took no notice of mine. And that " you may be ſenſible, good Sir, of the wrong " they did me, I will read them to you; and " accordingly he began as follows."

Come ſhepherds, let us dance and play
On great ſaint Corpus Chriſti's day;
For he comes down to give us thanks,
For all our kind and loving pranks.
When we have drank and made all even,
He flies back again to heaven.

What he does there I cannot say,
Since here with us he will not stay.
Come shepherds, let us dance and play, &c.

Having read his admired piece, which was too long to remember any more of it, he proceeded, "Now, Sir, could the very inventor of "doggrel himself have said any thing finer than "this? Do but consider what a deal of mystery "there is in that word Shepherds; it cost me "above a month's hard study." I could no longer contain myself within bounds, for I was ready to burst, and so breaking out into a loud fit of laughter, I said, "It is most wonderful; "but I observe you call great saint *Corpus Christi*, "whereas *Corpus Christi* is not the name of a "saint, but a festival instituted in honour of the "blessed sacrament." "That's a pretty fancy," replied he scornfully, "I'll show you him in the "kalendar, and he is canonized, and I'll lay my "head on it." I could not contend any more with him for laughing at his unaccountable ignorance, but told him, his verses deserved to be highly rewarded, for I had never seen any thing more comical in my life. "No," said he, "then pray hear a little of a small book I have "writ in honour of the eleven thousand virgins. "I have composed fifty stanzas, of eight verses "each, to every one of them; a most excellent

" piece." For fear of being peſtered with ſo many millions of his lines, I deſired him to ſhow me any thing that was not godly; and then he began to recite a comedy, which had as many acts as there are days in a year. He told me he writ it in two days, and that was the foul draught, and might be about half a ream of paper. The name of it was Noah's Ark; the whole repreſented by cocks and mice, aſſes, foxes, and wild boars, like Æſop's fables. I extolled both the plot and conduct; and he anſwered, " I ought not to commend it becauſe it " is my own, but the like was never made in " the world, beſides that it is altogether new; " and if I can but get it acted, there will be " nothing ſo fine. All the difficulty lies in " that, for if it were not, could any thing be ſo " ſublime and lofty; however, I have contri- " ved to have it all acted by parrots, jackdaws, " magpies, ſtarlings, and all other ſorts of birds " as ſpeak, and to bring in monkeys for the " farce." " That indeed will be very extraor- " dinary," anſwered I. " All this is nothing," replied the old man, " to what I have done for " the ſake of a woman I love; here are nine " hundred and one ſonnets, and twelve roun- " do's," as if he had been reckoning up pounds ſhillings and pence, " made in praiſe of my

" miſtreſs's legs." I aſked him, whether he had ever ſeen them? he replied, he had not *in verbo ſacerdotis*, but that all his conceits were by way of prophecy. Though it was a diverſion to hear his nonſenſe, I muſt confeſs I dreaded ſuch a multitude of barbarous verſes, and therefore endeavoured to turn off the diſcourſe another way, telling him, I ſaw hares; " Then," cried he, " I'll begin with one, in which I compare " her legs to that creature." Still to bring him off that ſubject, I went on, " Don't you ſee that " ſtar, Sir, which appears by daylight?" " As " ſoon as I have done with this," replied he, " I " will read you the thirtieth ſonnet, where I " call her a ſtar, for you talk as if you were ac- " quainted with my fancies." It was ſuch a vexation to me to find I could name nothing but what he had writ ſome nonſenſe upon, that I was all joy when I perceived we drew near Madrid, believing he would then give over for ſhame; but it proved quite contrary, for as ſoon as we came into the ſtreet, he began to raiſe his voice, to ſhow what he was. I entreated him to forbear, leſt if the boys ſhould once get the ſcent of a poet, all the rotten oranges and cabbage ſtumps in the town ſhould come after us, in regard the poets were declared madmen, in a proclamation ſet out againſt them, by one

that had been of the profeſſion, but recanted, and took up in time. This put him in a great conſternation, and he begged me to read it to him, if I had it. I promiſed him ſo to do when we came to our lodging; and accordingly we went to one where he uſed to alight, and found at leaſt a dozen blind ballad-ſingers at the door. Some knew him by the ſcent, and others by his voice, and all of them gave him a volley of welcomes. He embraced them all, and then ſome began to aſk him for verſes on the day of judgment in a lofty bombaſtical ſtyle, that might provoke action; others would have commemorations for the departed; and ſo the reſt, every one according to his fancy, and giving him eight royals a-man earneſt. He diſmiſſed them, and ſaid to me, I ſhall make above three hundred royals of the blind men, and therefore, with your leave, Sir, I'll withdraw for awhile now, to compoſe ſome lines, and after dinner we will hear the proclamation read, if you pleaſe. Wretched life! for none are more miſerable than thoſe madmen that get their bread by ſuch as are as mad as themſelves.

CHAP. X.

What happened to me at Madrid, my Adventures with a Soldier and a Hermit, and coming to my Uncle's.

THE poet withdrew awhile to ſtudy profaneneſs and nonſenſe for the blind ballad-ſingers, till it was dinner-time, which being over, they deſired to have the proclamation read, and having nothing elſe to do at that time, I drew it out, and complied with their deſires. I have inſerted it here, becauſe I reckon it ingenious, and pat to the purpoſes mentioned in it. Take it as follows:—

A PROCLAMATION,

Againſt Addle-headed, Numſkull, and Water Poets.

The old verſifier laughed out very heartily when he heard this title, and ſaid, "I might "have had buſineſs cut out till to-morrow; I "thought this had concerned me, and it is only "againſt numſkull poets." I was mightily pleaſed with his conceit, as if he had been a Horace or a Virgil: I ſkipped over the preamble, and began with the firſt article, which was as follows:—

IN regard that this ſort of vermine, called Poets, are our neighbours and Chriſtians, though

wicked ones, and conſidering they ſpend all their days in worſhipping of eyes, mouths, noſes, and old ribbons and ſlippers, beſides many other abominable ſins they are guilty of, we think fit to direct and ordain, that all common halfpenny poets be confined together againſt Eaſter, as lewd women are wont to be, and that care be taken to convince them of their evil practices, and to convert them; and to this purpoſe we do appoint monaſteries of repenting poets.

Item, Obſerving the exceſſive heats and droughts in the dog-days, cauſed by the abundance of ſuns, and other brighter ſtars, created and produced by thoſe high flying poets, we enjoin perpetual ſilence as to all heavenly beings, and appoint two months vacation for the muſes, as well as for the law, that they may have ſome time to recruit and recover the continual charge they are at.

Item, Foraſmuch as this infernal ſect of men, condemned to eternal ſlights, as murderers of good words, and raviſhers of ſentences, have infected the women with the plague of poetry, we declare that we look upon this miſchief done them as a ſufficient revenge for the damage we received from their ſex at the beginning of the world; and to ſupply the preſent wants and neceſſities the world now labours

under, we do farther ordain, that all the ſongs, and other verſes, made by poets in praiſe of women, be burned like old lace, to take out the gold and ſilver they put into their lady's hair and ſkins, and that all the oriental pearls, rubies, and precious ſtones, be picked out of them, ſince they are ſo full of thoſe rich metals and jewels.

Here the old poetaſter was quite out of patience, and ſtarting up in a fume, cried, "They "had even as good rob us of all we have. Pray, "Sir, let us have no more of it, for I deſign to "reverſe that judgment, and remove the cauſe, "not to chancery, for that would be a wrong "to my coat and dignity, but to the ſpiritual "court, where I will ſpend all I am worth. It "would be very pleaſant, that I, who am a "churchman, ſhould put up that wrong. I will "make it appear, that an eccleſiaſtical poet's "verſes are not liable to that proclamation, and "to loſe no time, I will go and prove it in open "court immediately." I could have laughed heartily at him, but for the more expedition, becauſe it grew late, I ſaid to him, "Sir, this "proclamation is made only for diverſion, and "is of no force, nor binding, as having no law-"ful authority." "A vengeance on it," replied the old man, in a great heat, "you ſhould have

" told me ſo much before, Sir, and might have " ſaved me all this trouble. Do you conſider " what a thing it is for a man to have a ſtock " of eight hundred thouſand ſongs and ballads " by him, and to hear ſuch a decree? Proceed, " Sir, and God forgive you for putting me into " ſuch a fright." Then I went on thus:

Item, For that very many, ſince they left their ancient idolatry of heathen gods and goddeſſes, ſtill retaining ſome Pagan ſuperſtitions, are turned ſhepherds, which is the cauſe that the cattle are withered up with drinking nothing but their tears, and parched with the fire that continually burns in their ſouls, and ſo charmed with their muſic, that they forget to feed; we do ordain, that they quit that employment, and that ſuch as love ſolitude have hermitages appointed them, and the reſt to be coachmen and watermen, becauſe thoſe are callings given to much mirth and ribaldry.

" It was ſome ſcoundrel, cuckoldy, Sodomi- " tical whoreſon," cried the mad rhymer, " that " contrived this proclamation; and if I knew " the dog, I would write ſuch a ſatire upon him, " as ſhould fret his ſoul, and all that read it. " What a pretty figure a ſmooth-faced man as " I am would make in a hermitage? And would " it be fit for a perſon dignified as reader to turn

" coachman? Enough, Sir, thoſe jeſts are not to be borne with. " I told you before," ſaid I, " that this is all a jeſt, and as ſuch you may " hear it." This ſaid, I proceeded.

Item, To prevent all wrongs, we do appoint, that, for the future, no verſes be imported from France or Italy, or other foreign parts, whence our poets ſteal, and pretend to make them their own; and that whatſoever poet ſhall be found guilty of this offence, be obliged to wear good clothes, and to keep himſelf clean, and ſweat for a week at leaſt.

Our poet was very well pleaſed with this decree, for he wore a caſſock that was grey with age, and ſo ragged, that it was a wonder he could go about without dropping in pieces: His gown and other accoutrements were only fit to manure the ground, which made me ſmile; and I told him, It farther ordained, That all women, who fell in love with mere poets, ſhould be reputed as deſperate perſons, who hang or drown themſelves, and as ſuch never be buried in hallowed ground.

And conſidering the mighty crop of roundelays, ſonnets, ſongs and ballads, theſe over rank years have produced, we do ordain, that all parcels of them, which have eſcaped the grocers and tobacconiſts, as unworthy thoſe employ-

ments, be sent to the necessary houses, without any appeal allowed them.

To conclude; I came to the last article which runs thus: However, taking it into our pitiful consideration, that there are three sorts of persons in the nation so very miserable, that they cannot live without this sort of poets, which are players, blind men, and ballad-singers; we do ordain, that there may be some journeymen of this profession, provided they be licensed by the aldermen-poets of their wards; with this limitation, that the players poets shall not use any devils or conjurers in their farces, nor conclude their comedies in matrimony; that the blind men shall not sing dismal stories which happened at Jerusalem or Morocco, nor patch up their verses with "eak also, and well a-day," and the like; and, that the ballad-singers shall no longer run upon Sawny and Jocky, nor quibble upon words, nor contrive their songs so, that altering but the names, they may serve upon all occasions. To conclude, we command all poets in general to discard Jupiter, Venus, Apollo, and all the herd of heathen gods and goddesses, on pain of having none but them to pray by them on their deathbed.

All that heard the proclamation read, were

highly pleaſed, and begged copies of it; only the old poetical reader began to ſwear by his Bible, that it was a ſatire upon him, becauſe of what it contained concerning the blind men, he told us, he knew what he did better than any man, and went on, ſaying, "Do not miſtake "me, I once lay in the ſame houſe with Linnan, "and dined ſeveral times with Eſpinel, and was "in Madrid, as near Lope de Vega, as to any "man in the room, and have ſeen Don Alonſo "de Arſilla a thouſand times, and have a pic-"ture at home of the divine Figueroa, and I "bought the old breeches Padilla left off when "he became a friar, which I ſtill wear, though "bad enough." Theſe were all old Spaniſh famous poets, with whom he pretended to be thus acquainted, as if the knowledge of them would have made his nonſenſe the more tolerable. At the ſame time he ſhowed us the breeches, which ſet all the company into ſuch a fit of laughing, that none of them cared to leave the lodging. But it was now two of the clock, and being to travel farther, we left Madrid. I took my leave of him, though unwillingly enough, and travelled on towards the Paſs on the mountains.

It pleaſed God, to divert me from evil thoughts, that I met with a ſoldier; we fell into diſcourſe; he aſked me, whether I came from the court?

I told him I only paſſed through the town. "It is fit for nothing elſe," anſwered the ſoldier, "it is full of baſe people; by the Lord, I had "rather lie at a ſiege up to the waiſt in ſnow; "expecting a kind bullet, and half ſtarved, than "endure the inſolencies they offer a man of ho-"nour." I replied, He ſhould conſider that at court there were people of all ſorts, and that they made great account of any perſon of worth. He cut me off ſhort, ſaying in a great paſſion, "Why, I have been this half year at "court, ſuing for a pair of colours, after twenty "campaigns, and having ſhed my blood in the "king's ſervice, as appears by theſe wounds." And at the ſame time he ſhowed me a ſcar half a quarter long on his groin, which was as plain a bullet as the light of the day; and two ſeams on his heels, ſaying, they had been ſhots; but I concluded, by ſome I have of the ſame ſort, that they had been chilblains broken. He pulled off his hat to ſhow me his face, where appeared a long gaſh from ear to ear, and quite acroſs his noſe, beſides other ſmaller cuts, that made it look like a mathematical draught, all of lines. "Theſe," ſaid he, "I received at Paris, ſerving "my God and my king, for whom I have had "my countenance carved out, and disfigured; "and in return, I have received nothing but

" fair words, which are equivalent at preſent to " foul actions. Let me entreat you, learned " Sir, to read theſe papers; for by heavens, a " more remarkable man, I vow to God, never " went into the field;" and he ſpoke truth, for he had marks enough to be known by. With this, he began to pull out tin-caſes, and to ſhow me a multitude of papers, which I believed belonged to another, whoſe name he had borrowed. I read them, and ſpoke abundance in his praiſe, pretending that Cæſar and Alexander the Great could not compare with him. He laid hold of what I ſaid in a paſſion, and cried, " To " compare with me; by this light! no more are " Hannibal or Scipio, nor others as great as they. " Damn all they did, there was no cannon in " their days. The devil take me, Pompey would " be a mere chicken now. Pray, Sir, do you " but inquire in the Low Countries, about the " exploit performed by the perſon that wanted " a tooth before, and you will hear what they " ſay of it." Are you the perſon, Sir, ſaid I? And he replied, " Why, who do you think it " was? Do not you ſee here is a breach in my " teeth? But let us talk no more of it; for it " does not become a man to praiſe himſelf." This diſcourſe held us along, till we overtook a hermit riding on an aſs, with a long beard like a

bruſh, lean, and clad in ſackcloth. We ſaluted him as uſual, with the words *Deo Gratias;* and he began to extol the corn on the ground, and in it the mercies of God. The ſoldier immediately flew out, and ſaid, "Father, I have ſeen "pikes charged againſt me thicker than that "corn; and I vow to God, I did all that man "could do at the ſacking of Antwerp, that I did "by the Lord!" The hermit reproved him for ſwearing ſo much, and he anſwered, "It is a "ſign you were never a ſoldier, Father, ſince you "reprove me for exerciſing my calling." It made me laugh to hear what he made ſoldiery to conſiſt in, and perceived he was ſome ſcoundrel, who knew little of that noble profeſſion, but that infamous part, moſt uſed by the ſcum of thoſe that follow it.

We came at length to the Paſs on the mountain, the hermit praying all the way on a pair of beads ſo big, it was a load; and every bead he dropped, ſounded like a ſtroke with a mallet. The ſoldier compared the rocks to the forts he pretended to have ſeen, obſerved what place was ſtrong, and where the cannon might be planted for battery. I had my eyes fixed on them both, and was as much afraid of the hermit's monſtrous beads, as of the ſoldiers extravagant lies. How eaſily, ſaid he, would I blow

up a great part of this Pafs with gunpowder, and do all travellers good fervice. Thus we came to Cerecedilla, and went into an inn all three of us, after night-fall; we ordered fupper, though it was Friday, and in the meanwhile the hermit faid, "Let us divert ourfelves awhile, for idle-"nefs is the fource of all vice, let us play for "prayers;" and fo faying, he dropped a pack of cards out of his fleeve. I could not but laugh at that pleafant fight, confidering the great beads; but the foldier cried, "Let us lovingly "play as far as an hundred royals will go I have "about me." Being covetous, I faid I would venture the like fum, and the hermit, rather than difoblige, confented, telling us, he had about two hundred royals to buy oil for the lamp. I muft confefs, I thought to have fucked up all his oil, but may the Turk always fucceed as I did. We played at Lanfkenet, and the beft of it was, he pretended he did not underftand the game, and made us teach it him. He let us win for two deals, but then turned fo fharp upon us, that he left us bare, and became our heir before we were dead. The dog palmed upon us fo flily, it was a fhame to fee him; would now and then let us draw a fingle ftake, and then double it upon us. The foldier every card he loft, let fly half a fcore oaths, and twice as many curfes,

wrapped up in blaſphemies. For my part, I was eating my nails, whilſt the hermit drew my money to him. He called upon all the ſaints in heaven, and in ſhort left us pennyleſs. We would have played on upon ſome little pawns, but when he had won my ſix hundred royals, and the ſoldier's hundred, he ſaid, That was only for paſtime, and we were all brethren, and therefore he would not meddle any farther. "Do not ſwear," ſaid he, "for you ſee I have "had good luck, becauſe I prayed to God." We believed him, as not knowing the ſleight he had at packing the cards; and the ſoldier ſwore he would never play again, and ſo did I. A curſe on it, cried the poor enſign, for he then told me he was ſo, "I have been among Turks and In-"fidels, but was never ſo ſtripped." The good hermit laughed at all we ſaid, and pulled out his beads again. Having never a croſs left, I deſired him to treat me at ſupper, and pay for our lodging till we came to Segovia, ſince he had cleared our pockets. He promiſed ſo to do, devoured threeſcore eggs, the like I never beheld, and ſaid he would go take his reſt. We all lay in a great hall among other people, all the rooms being taken up before. I lay down very melancholy; the ſoldier called the landlord, and gave him charge of his papers in the tin-caſes,

and a bundle of tattered ſhirts, and ſo we went to ſleep. The hermit made the ſign of the croſs, and we bleſſed ourſelves from him.

He ſlept, and I watched, contriving how to get his money from him. The ſoldier talked in his ſleep about his hundred royals, as if they had not been paſt retrieving. When it was time to riſe, he called haſtily for a light, which was brought, and the landlord gave the ſoldier his bundle, but forgot his papers. The poor enſign made the houſe ring, calling for his ſervices. The landlord was amazed, and every body preſſing that he ſhould give them, he ran out, and brought three cloſe-ſtools, ſaying, "There is every one one, would you have any "more?" Suppoſing we were all taken with a looſeneſs; for in Spaniſh, ſervices is a polite word for a cloſe-ſtool. This had like to have ſpoiled all, for the ſoldier got up in his ſhirt, with his ſword in his hand, and ran after the landlord, ſwearing he would murder him; becauſe he made a jeſt of him, who had been at the battles of Lepanto, Saint Quintin, and ſeveral others, and brought him cloſe-ſtools inſtead of the papers he had given him. We all ran after, to hold him, and little enough, whilſt the landlord cried, "Sir, You aſked me for ſer-"vices, I was not bound to know, that in the

"language of ſoldiers, they give that name to "the certificates of their exploits." At length we appeaſed them, and returned to our room. The hermit fearing the worſt, lay abed, pretending the fright had done him harm; however, he paid our reckoning, and we ſet out towards the mountain, very much diſturbed at his carriage towards us, and much more for that we had not been able to get his money from him.

We met a Genoeſe, I mean one of thoſe bankers, who help to drain Spain of all its money. He was going up the mountain, with a ſervant behind him, an umbrella over his head, and much like a rich uſurer. We fell into diſcourſe with him, and ſtill he turned it to talk of money, for they are a people that ſeem born for nothing but the purſe. He preſently fell upon Bizanzon, and to argue whether it were convenient or no to put out money to Bizanzon. At laſt the ſoldier and I aſked him, what gentleman that was he talked of? He anſwered, ſmiling, "It is a town in Italy, where all the "great money-dealers meet, to ſettle the ex- "change and value of coin." By which we underſtood that Bizanzon was the great exchange of uſurers. He entertained us on the way, telling he was undone, becauſe a bank

was broke, in which he had above ſixty thouſand ducats; and ſwore by his conſcience to all he ſaid, though I am of opinion, that conſcience among traders is like a maidenhead among whores, which they ſell, though they have none. Scarce any trader has any conſcience, for being informed that it has a ſting, they leave it behind them with the navelſtring when they come into the world. We held on our converſation, till we ſpied the walls of Segovia, which was a great ſatisfaction to me, though the thoughts of what I had endured under the wicked Cabra, at the ſtarving boarding-ſchool, would have given a check to my joy. When I came to the town, I ſpied my father waiting upon the road, which brought tears to my eyes; but I went on, being much altered ſince I left the place, for I began to have a beard, and was well clad. I parted from my company, and conſidering who was moſt likely to know my uncle beſides the gallows, I could not imagine whom to apply myſelf to. I went up and aſked ſeveral people for Alonſo Ramplon, and nobody could give me any tidings of him, every one ſaid he did not know him: I was very glad to find ſo many honeſt men in my town. As I ſtood in a ſtudy, I heard the common crier ſet up his note, and after him my good uncle play-

ing his part. There came a file of barcheaded fellows, naked to the waiſt, before my uncle, and he played a tune upon all their backs, going from the one to the other. I ſtood gazing at this ſight, with a man I had been inquiring of, and told him I was a perſon of great birth; when I ſaw my uncle draw near, and he eſpying me, ran to embrace me, calling me, nephew. I thought I ſhould have died for ſhame, never looked back to take leave of the man I was with, but went along with my uncle, who ſaid to me, you may follow till I have done with theſe people, for we are now upon our return, and you ſhall dine with me to-day. I being mounted on my mule, and thinking in that gang I ſhould be but one degree leſs expoſed than thoſe that were whipped, told him I would wait there, and ſtepped a little aſide, ſo very much out of countenance, that had not the recovery of my inheritance depended on him, I would never more have ſpoke to him, or been ſeen in that place. He concluded his exerciſe, came back, and carried me to his houſe, where I alighted, and we dined.

CHAP. XI.

The kind Entertainment I had at my Uncle's, the Viſits I received, how I recovered my Inheritance, and returned to Madrid.

My worthy uncle quartered near the ſlaughter-houſe, at a waterman's houſe, we went in, and he ſaid to me, "My lodging is not a palace, but "I aſſure you, nephew, it ſtands conveniently "for my buſineſs." We went up ſuch a pair of ſtairs, that I longed to be at the top, to know whether there was any difference betwixt it and the ladder at the gallows. There we came into ſuch a low room, that we walked about as if we had been all full of courteſy, bowing to one another. He hung up the cat-of-nine-tails on a nail, about which there were others with halters, broad knives, axes, hooks, and other tools belonging to the trade. He aſked me, why I did not take off my gown and ſit down? I anſwered, I did not uſe to do ſo. I cannot expreſs how much I was out of countenance at my uncle's infamous profeſſion, who told me, it was lucky that I came at ſuch a time, for I ſhould have a good dinner, becauſe he had invited ſome friends. As we were talking, in came one of thoſe that beg charity at the church-doors for

poor families in diſtreſs, in a purple gown down to his heels, and rattling his queſting box, ſaid, "I have got as much to day by my diſtreſſed "families, as you have done by the rogues you "flogged." They made ſome grimaces at one another, the wicked queſter tucked up his long robe, diſcovering a pair of bandy legs, and canvaſs breeches, and began to ſhift about, aſking, whether Clement was come? My uncle told him, he was not, when at the ſame time in came an oak-threſher, I mean a ſwineherd, wrapped up in a clout, with a pair of wooden ſhoes on. I knew him by his horn he had in his hand, which had been more faſhionable, had it been upon his head. He ſaluted us after his manner, and next to him in came a left-handed ſquinting Mulatto, with a hat that had brims like an umbrella, and a crown like a ſugar-loaf; his ſword as much iron about it as would have ſet up a ſmith's ſhop; a buff-doublet; his face as full of ſcars, as if it had been made of patches ſtitched together. He ſat down, ſaluting all the company, and ſaid to my uncle, "By my troth, "Alonſo, Flat Noſe and Snaffle have been well "mauled to-day." Up ſtarted the queſter, and cried, "I gave Flechilla, the executioner of "Ocana, four ducats, to put on the aſs apace, "and play with a ſlender cat-of nine-tails, when

"I was fly-flaped there. By the Lord," quoth the Mulatto, "I was too kind to the dog Lo-
"brezno at Murcia, for the aſs went a ſnail's
"gallop all the way, and the rogue laid them
"on ſo, that my back was all weals. My back
"has his maidenhead ſtill," ſaid the ſwineherd.
"Every dog has his day," anſwered the queſter.
"I muſt ſay that for myſelf," quoth my good uncle, "that of all whipſters I am the man, who
"am true and truſty to thoſe that beſpeak me;
"theſe to-day gave me five crowns, and they
"had a parcel of friendly laſhes with the ſingle
"cat-of-nine-tails." I was ſo much out of countenance, to ſee what good company my uncle kept, that my bluſhes betrayed me, and the Mulatto perceiving it, ſaid, "Is this reverend
"gentleman the perſon that ſuffered the other
"day, and had a certain number of ſtripes given
"him." I anſwered, "I was none of thoſe that
"ſuffered as they had done." With this my uncle ſtarted up, and ſaid, "This is my nephew,
"a graduate at Alcala, and a great ſcholar."
They begged my pardon, and made tenders of great friendſhip.

I was quite mad to eat my dinner, receive what was due, and get as far as I could from my uncle. The cloth was laid, and the meat drawn up in an old hat, as they draw up the alms that

is given in priſons. It was diſhed up in broken platters, and pieces of old crocks and pans, being dreſſed in a ſtinking cellar, which was ſtill more plague and confuſion to me. They ſat down, the queſter at the upper end, and the reſt as it fell out. I will not tell what we eat, but only that they were all dainties to encourage drinking. The Mulatto, in a trice, poured down three pints of pure red. The ſwineherd ſeeing the cup ſtand at me, ſtill whipt it off, pledging more healths than we ſpoke words; no man called for water, or ſo much as thought of it. Five good minced pies were ſerved up; they took off the upper cruſts, filled them with wine, and then ſaid a ſhort prayer for the ſoul to whom the fleſh belonged. Then ſaid my uncle, "You "remember, nephew, what I wrote to you about "your father, it now comes afreſh into my "mind." They all eat, but I took up with only the bottoms, and ever ſince then I have retained the cuſtom of ſaying a prayer for the ſoul departed, when I eat minced pies. The pots went round without ceaſing, and the Mulatto and the queſter plied it ſo hard, that a diſh of ſcurvy ſauſages, looking like fingers of blacks cut off, being ſet upon the table, one of them aſked what they meant by ſerving up dreſſed charcoal? My uncle, by this time, was in ſuch a condi-

tion, up to the throat in wine, with one eye almoſt out, and the other half drowned, that laying hold of one of the ſauſages, in a hoarſe and uncouth tone, he ſaid, "By this bread, which "is God's creature, made to his own image and "likeneſs, I never eat better black meat, ne-"phew." It made me laugh with one ſide of my mouth, and fret with the other, to ſee the Mulatto, ſtretching out his hand, lay hold of the ſalt, and cry, "This pottage is hot;" and at the ſame time, the ſwineherd took a whole handful of ſalt, and clapping it into his mouth, ſay, "This is a pretty provocative for drinking." After all this medley, there came ſome ſoup, ſo orderly was our entertainment. The queſter laying hold of a porringer with both hands, cried, "God's bleſſing on cleanlineſs;" and inſtead of clapping of it to his mouth, laid it to his cheek, where he poured it down, ſcalding his face, and waſhing himſelf in greaſe from head to foot, in a moſt ſhameful manner: Being in this miſerable plight, he tried to get up, but his head being too heavy, he was fain to reſt with both his hands upon the table, which was only a board ſet upon two treſſels, ſo that it overturned and greaſed all the reſt, and then he cried, That the ſwineherd had puſhed him. The ſwineherd ſeeing the other fall upon him, ſcrambled up, and

laying hold of his horn trumpet, beat it about his ears. They grappled and clung ſo cloſe together that the queſter ſet his teeth in the ſwineherd's cheek, and both of them rolling on the ground, made ſuch a wambling in the ſwineherd's belly, that he caſt up all he had eat and drank in the queſter's face. My uncle, who was the ſobereſt of all the company, aſked how ſo many clergymen had come into his houſe? Perceiving that they all looked through multiplying glaſſes, I parted the two combatants, made them friends, and helped up the Mulatto, who lay on the ground maudlin-drunk, and weeping bitterly. I laid my uncle on his bed, who made a low bow to a tall wooden candleſtick he had, thinking it had been one of his gueſts. Next I took away the ſwineherd's horn, but there was no ſilencing him after all the reſt were aſleep, he was ſtill calling for his horn, and ſaid, "No "man ever could play more tunes on it, and "he would now imitate the organs."

In ſhort, I never left them till they were all faſt aſleep; then I went abroad, and ſpent the afternoon in ſeeing the town; paſſed by Cabra's houſe, and heard he was dead, but never aſked of what diſtemper, knowing he could die of none as long as it was poſſible to ſtarve. At night I returned home, full four hours after I

had gone out, and found one of the company awake, crawling about the room on all four to find the door, and complaining he had loſt the houſe: I raiſed him up, and let the reſt ſleep till eleven at night, when they awaked of themſelves, ſtretching and yawning. One of them aſked, "What a clock it was?" The ſwine-herd, who had not laid half his fumes, anſwered, "It was ſtill the heat of the day, and the weather "very ſultry." The queſter, as well as he could ſpeak, aſked for his cloak, ſaying, "The di-"ſtreſſed families had been long neglected, the "whole care of them lying upon his hands;" and thinking to go to the door, he went to the window, where ſeeing the ſtars, he cried out to the others, telling them "That the ſky was "full of ſtars at noonday, and there was a "mighty eclipſe." They all bleſſed themſelves, and kiſſed the floor. Having obſerved the villany of the queſter, I was much ſcandalized, and reſolved to take heed of that ſort of men. The ſight of all theſe abominable practices made me the more impatient to be among gentlemen and perſons of worth. I got them all away one by one, the beſt I could, and put my uncle to bed, who, though not foxed, was drunk enough, and made the beſt ſhift I could myſelf, with my own clothes, and ſome of the poor de-

parted ſouls that lay about the room. Thus we paſſed the night, and in the morning I diſcourſed my uncle about ſeeing my inheritance, and taking poſſeſſion of it, telling him I was quite tired, and knew not with what. He ſtretched himſelf, got up; we had much talk concerning my affairs, and I had enough to do with him, he was ſo uncouth and dull. At length I prevailed with him to diſcover to me part of my inheritance, though not all; and ſo he told me of three hundred ducats my worthy father had got by ſleight of hand, and left them in cuſtody of a virtuous woman, that was the receiver of all that was ſtole for ten leagues round the country. To be ſhort, I received and put up my money, which my uncle had not yet drank out, nor conſumed; and that was very much, conſidering he was ſuch a brutal man; but the reaſon was, he thought it would ſerve me to take my degrees, and, with a little learning, I might come to be a cardinal, which to him ſeemed no difficult matter. When he underſtood I had the money, he ſaid to me, "My "child, Paul, it will be your own fault if you "do not thrive, and are not a good man, ſince "you have a good example before you. You "have got money, and I will always be your "friend, for all I have and all I earn is yours."

I returned him thanks for his kind offers; we ſpent the day in extravagant talk, and in returning the viſits to the aforeſaid perſons. They diverted the afternoon playing at all-fours, the ſame company, my uncle, the ſwineherd, and the queſter, this laſt ſquandering the money of the poor at a villanous rate. It was wonderful to ſee how dexterous they were at it, and ſtill every game there was ſo much wet, for the pot ſtood continually ready before them. Night came on, the gueſts went away, and my uncle and I to bed, for he had now got me a quilt. When it was day, I got up before he was awake, and went away, without being perceived, to an inn, locking the door on the outſide, and thruſting in the key at a cranny. I went away, as I have ſaid, to an inn, to hide myſelf, and wait the next opportunity to go to Madrid. I left him a letter ſealed up in the room, wherein I gave an account of my departure, and the reaſons that moved me ſo to do, deſiring he would make no inquiry after me, for I would never ſee him more.

CHAP. XII.

My Departure from Segovia, and Journey to Madrid, with what happened to me by the Way.

A CARRIER was ſetting out that morning from the inn for Madrid, he had a ſpare aſs, which I hired, and went before to expect him without the city gate. He came accordingly; I mounted, and began my journey, and ſaid to myſelf, "Farewell to thee for ever, thou knave of an "uncle, diſhonour of our family, helliſh finiſh-"er of the law." I conſidered I was going to Madrid, the court of Spain, where, to my great ſatisfaction, nobody knew me, and there I muſt truſt to my ingenuity. The firſt thing I reſolved to do was to lay aſide my ſcholar's habit, and clothe myſelf in the faſhion. But let us return to my uncle, who was in a great rage at the letter I left him, which was to this effect:

Mr. ALONSO RAMPLON,

"Since it has pleaſed God to ſhow "me ſuch ſignal mercies, as to take away my "good father, and to order my mother to be "conveyed to Toledo, where I know the beſt

"that can come of her is to vaniſh away in "ſmoke; all I could wiſh for at preſent would "be to ſee you ſerved as you ſerve others. I "deſign to be ſingular in my family, for I can "never make more than one, unleſs I fall under "your hands, and you carve me up as you do "others. Do not inquire after me, for it be- "hoves me to deny the kindred that is between "us. Serve God and the King."

It is impoſſible to expreſs how in all likelihood he railed and ſwore at me; but let us leave him there, and return to my journey. I was mounted, like Sancho Pancha, on a ſtately dapple aſs, and wiſhed with all my heart that I might meet nobody; when on a ſudden I diſcovered, at a diſtance, an underling ſort of a gentleman, with his cloak hanging on his ſhoulders, his ſword by his ſide, cloſe breeches, and boots on, altogether, to outward appearance, genteel enough, with a clean ſtarched band, and his hat on one ſide, like a ballad-ſinger. I conceived he was ſome man of quality that was walking, and had left his coach behind him; and accordingly, when I came up, ſaluted him. He viewed me, and ſaid, "It is very likely, "good Sir, that you travel much more eaſy on "that aſs than I do with all my equipage."

Imagining he had meant his coach and ſervants he left behind, I anſwered, "In troth, Sir, I rec-
"kon it more eaſy travelling than in a coach,
"for though there is no diſpute but you go very eaſily in that you have left behind you, yet the
"jolting of it is troubleſome." "What coach
"behind?" replied he, in a great conſternation; and turning ſhort to look about him, the ſudden motion made his breeches drop down, for it broke only one point he had to hold them up; and though he ſaw me ready to burſt with laughing, he aſked to borrow one of me. Perceiving he had no more ſhirt than would come within the waiſtband of his breeches, and ſcarce reach to acquaint his breech he had any, I replied, "As I hope for mercy, Sir, you had beſt
"wait till your ſervants come up, for I cannot
"poſſibly aſſiſt you, having but one ſingle point
"to hold up my own breeches." "If you are
"in jeſt, Sir," quoth he, holding his breeches in his hands, "let it paſs, for I do not underſtand
"what you mean by ſervants." With this he went on, and was ſo plain in letting me know he was poor, that before we had gone half a league together, he owned he ſhould never be able to get to Madrid, unleſs I would let him ride upon my aſs awhile, he was ſo tired with walking with his breeches in his hands, which

moved me to compaſſion, and I alighted. He was ſo encumbered with his breeches, that I was fain to help him up, and was much ſurpriſed at what I diſcovered by my feeling; for behind, as far as was covered with the cloak, the buttocks had no other fence againſt the eyes and the air. He being ſenſible of the diſcovery I had made, very diſcreetly prevented what reflection I might make, ſaying, "All is not gold that glitters, re-"verend Sir," giving me that title on account of my long ſcholar's robe; "no doubt but when "you ſaw my fine ſtarched band, and the ſhow "I made, you fancied I was the Lord knows "who. Little do you think how many fine "outſides are as bare within as what you felt." I aſſured him upon my word that I had conceited much different matters from what I found. "Why then, Sir," replied he, "let me tell you, "all you have ſeen as yet is nothing, for every "thing about me is remarkable, and no part of "me is truly clad. Such as you ſee me, I am a "real ſubſtantial gentleman, of a good family, "and known ſeat on the mountains; and could "I but feed my body as I keep my ſeat and "gentility, I ſhould be a happy man. But as "the world goes, good Sir, there is no keeping "up noble blood without bread and meat, and, "God be praiſed, it runs red in every man's

" veins; nor can he be a worthy perſon who is " worth nothing. I am now convinced of the " value of a good pedigree, for being ready to " ſtarve one day, they would not give a chop " of mutton in the cook's-ſhop for mine; and " yet it is flouriſhed with gold letters, but the " leaf gold on pills is more valuable, and few " men of letters have any gold. I have ſold " all to my very burial-place, that nothing may " be called mine when I am dead, for my fa- " ther Toribio Rodriguez Ballejo Gomez de " Ampuero Jordan loſt all he had in the world " by being bound for others. I have nothing " now left to ſell but the title of Don, and I am " ſo unfortunate, that I can find nobody that " has occaſion for it, becauſe there is ſcarce a " ſcoundrel now but uſurps it." Though the poor gentleman's misfortunes were intermixed with ſomething that was comical, I could not but pity him, aſked his name, whither he was going, and what to do? He anſwered with all his father's names, Don Toribio Rodriguez Ballejo Gomez de Ampuero Jordan. Never did I hear ſuch an empty ſounding jingling name, or ſo like the clattering of a bell, as beginning in *Don*, and ending in *dan*. He added, he was going to Madrid, becauſe a threadbare elder brother, as he was, ſoon grew tainted and moul-

dy in a country town, and had no way to ſubſiſt; and therefore he was going to the common refuge of diſtreſſed perſons, where there is room for all, and open houſe kept for wandering ſpongers: And I never want five or ſix crowns in my pocket, ſaid he, as ſoon as I come thither, nor a good bed, meat, and drink, and ſometimes a forbidden pleaſure; for a good wit at court is like the philoſopher's ſtone, which converts all it touches into gold. This to me was the moſt welcome news I had ever heard; and therefore, as it were to divert the tediouſneſs of our journey, I deſired him to inform me how, and by whom, he, and others in his condition, could live at court, for to me it appeared a very difficult matter, becauſe every one there ſeemed ſo far from being contented with his own, that he aimed at what belonged to others. "There are many of all ſorts," replied my ſpark, "but flattery is like a maſter-key, "which introduces a man whereſoever he plea- "ſes, in ſuch great places; and that you may "not think ſtrange of what I ſay, do but liſten "to my adventures and contrivances, and you "will be convinced of the truth of it."

CHAP. XIII.

The Threadbare Gentleman, by the Way, according to Promiſe, gives an Account of his Life and Actions.

"THE firſt thing you are to obſerve, is, that at "court there are always the wiſeſt and the weak- "eſt, the richeſt and the pooreſt, and the ex- "tremes of all other ſorts. There the virtuous "are concealed, and the wicked not taken no- "tice of; and there live a ſort of people like "myſelf, who are not known to have any eſtates, "real or perſonal, nor does it appear whence "they came, or how they live. Among our- "ſelves we are diſtinguiſhed by ſeveral names, "ſome are called gentlemen-mumpers, others "ſharpers, others pinchguts, others barebones, "and others commoners; but in general, we "live by our wits. For the moſt part, we cheat "our guts of their due, for it is a very danger- "ous and troubleſome thing to live upon others. "We are mere ſcarecrows at all good tables, "the terror of cook-ſhops, and always unbidden "and unwelcome gueſts, living like chamelions "by the air, and yet never contented. When "we happen to dine upon a leek, we ſtrut and "look as big as if ſtuffed with capon. Who-

" ſoever comes to viſit us, never fails to find
" mutton and fowl bones, and parings of fruit
" about the houſe, and the doors ſtrewed with
" feathers and young cony ſkins; all which
" we pick up over-night, about the ſtreets, to
" credit us the next day. As ſoon as the friend
" comes in, we fall into a paſſion, and cry, It is
" a ſtrange thing that I can never make this
" maid ſweep the room in time. Good Sir, ex-
" cuſe me, for I have had ſome friends at din-
" ner, and theſe ſervants never mind their buſi-
" neſs, &c. Such as do not know us, believe it,
" and think we have had an entertainment.
" Next, as for dining at other men's houſes,
" whenſoever we have ſpoke but three words
" with a man, we take care to know where he
" lives, thither we are ſure to make juſt at eat-
" ing-time, when we know he is at table; we
" tell him, his converſation has ſo charmed us,
" that we are not able to keep away, for he is
" the moſt taking perſon in the world. If he
" aſks whether we have dined, and they have
" not yet begun, we anſwer in the negative. If
" they invite us, we never ſtay to be aſked twice,
" becauſe thoſe ceremonies have often made us
" go with hungry bellies. If they have begun
" to eat, we ſay we have dined, and then, though
" the maſter of the houſe carves up his fowl, or

" any joint of meat never ſo dexterouſly, that we " may have the opportunity of chopping up a " mouthful or two, we cry, By your leave, Sir, " pray let me have the honour of being your " carver, for I remember, naming ſome duke or " earl that is dead, God reſt his ſoul, uſed to " take more delight in ſeeing me carve, than in " eating. This ſaid, we lay hold of the knife, " cut out curious bits, and ſay, How delicately " it ſmells! It would be an affront to the cook " not to taſte it, what a delicate hand ſhe has at " ſeaſoning! With this we fall on, and down " goes half the meat in the diſh for a taſte. If " there be bacon, we call it our delight; if mut- " ton, the only thing we love; if but a turnip, " an excellent morſel; and ſo every thing that " comes in our way, is ever the thing we moſt " admire. If all this fails, we are ſure of the " alms of ſome monaſtery; which we do not re- " ceive in public among the beggars, but pri- " vately, endeavouring to perſuade the friars, " that we rather take it out of devotion, than " for want.

" It is pleaſant enough to ſee one of us in a " gaming-houſe, how diligently he attends, ſnuffs " the candles, reaches the chamberpots, fetches " cards, applauds all the winner ſays, and all " this for a poor royal or two he gives him. We

" carry in our mind the whole inventory of our
" wardrobe or ragſhop, in order to dreſs us; and
" as in ſome places they obſerve ſet times for
" prayer, ſo do we for mending and botching.
" It is wonderful to ſee what variety of rubbiſh
" we lay up, and produce upon occaſion. We
" look upon the ſun as our mortal enemy, be-
" cauſe he diſcovers our darns, ſtitches, and
" patches; and yet are forced to be beholding
" to him, ſtanding up with our legs wide open
" in the morning where he ſhines in, to diſcover
" by the ſhadows on the ground, what ſhreds or
" rags hang between our legs, and then with a
" pair of ſciſſars we trim the breeches. Now
" that part betwixt the thighs being ſo apt to
" wear, it is very odd to obſerve what gaps we
" make behind to fill up the forepart, ſo that
" very often the poſteriors are hacked away, till
" they remain quite naked. Only the cloak is
" privy to this ſecret, and therefore we are very
" cautious of windy days, and of going up ſtairs
" that are light, or mounting a-horſeback. We
" make it our buſineſs to ſtudy poſtures againſt
" the light; and if it prove a very bright day,
" we walk with our legs as cloſe as may be, and
" ſit as if our knees were clung together, for
" fear leſt we open them the gaſhes may ap-
" pear. There is nothing about us, but what

" has been another thing before, and may have " a particular hiſtory writ of it; as for inſtance, " you ſee this waiſtcoat, Sir, it was once a pair " of wide kneed breeches, grandchild to a ſhort " cloak, and great grandchild to a long mourn- " er's cloak, which was its firſt parent, and now " it waits to be converted into footing for " ſtockings, and forty other things.' Our ſocks " were once handkerchiefs, deſcended from " towels, which had been ſhirts, and thoſe the " iſſue of ſheets; after all this, they are made " into paper, on which we write, and at laſt, " burn to make blacking for our ſhoes, where I " have ſeen it perform wonders, recovering many " a pair that was condemned as only fit for the " dunghill. At night we never fail to get at " the greateſt diſtance we can from the light, " for fear of diſcovering our threadbare cloaks, " and woolleſs coats, for there is no more knap " on them than is upon a ſtone; and though it " pleaſes God to give us hair on our faces, we " have none on our clothes; and therefore to " ſave the expence of a barber, we always con- " trive to ſtay till two of us want triming toge- " ther, and then we ſcrape one another, follow- " ing the advice of the goſpel, ' Be helpful to " one another like loving brethren.' Beſides, " we always take care not to intrude into the

" houſes of others, for every one keeps his own,
" and timely notice is given to avoid conten-
" tion, being very jealous in the point of eating.
" It is an indiſpenſable duty among us to ride
" about all the great noted ſtreets once a quar-
" ter, though it be on a colt, and once a-year
" to go in a coach, when we are ſure to ſit as
" cloſe to the door as poſſible, thruſting out our
" heads, bowing to all that paſs by to be ſeen,
" and talking to our friends and acquaintance,
" though they do not ſee or mind us. If any
" unmannerly creature happens to bite us be-
" fore ladies, we have ways to ſcratch in public,
" without being taken notice of; for if it hap-
" pens to be on the thigh, we tell a ſtory of a
" ſoldier we ſaw had a ſhot through there, clap-
" ping our fingers on the place that itches, and
" clawing inſtead of pointing. If it is in the
" church, and they ſting on our breaſts, we beat
" them by way of devotion, though it be at a
" chriſtening; for the back, we lean againſt a
" pillar or wall, and rub it there, as if we only
" ſtood up to obſerve ſomething. To deal in-
" genuouſly, as to the matter of lying, not one
" word of truth ever comes out of our mouths.
" In all companies we run over a bead-roll of
" dukes and earls, making ſome of them our
" friends, and others our relations, always ob-

" ſerving that thoſe great men muſt be either
" dead, or very remote. The beſt of all is, that
" we never fall in love, unleſs it be to earn our
" bread; for by our conſtitutions, coy ladies,
" though never ſo beautiful, are abſolutely for-
" bidden; ſo that we ever court a tripeman
" for our meat, the landlady for our lodging,
" the ſtarcher for our band, and other neceſſa-
" ries; and though ſuch ſlender diet makes us
" unfit to ſatisfy them all, yet we keep them in
" good humour: Will any body that ſees the
" boots on my legs believe they are upon the
" bare ſkin, without any ſtockings? Or will any
" one that ſees my curious ſtarched band ima-
" gine I have no ſhirt? Let me tell you, Sir, a
" gentleman may make a ſhift without thoſe
" things, but there is no living for him without
" a ſet ſtarched band. This is an outward orna-
" ment, altogether neceſſary to grace a man;
" and beſides, when he has turned it, and wound
" it every way, the ſtarch in it will make him a
" meſs as good as watergruel. In ſhort, reve-
" rend Sir, a gentleman of our ſtamp muſt go
" through all ſorts of wants and hardſhips, and
" that is the way to live at court. Sometimes
" he flouriſhes and rolls in plenty, and at ano-
" ther time he falls into an hoſpital; but ſtill he